

# AMYX AND ALLIED ANCESTORS

SIXTEENTH CENTURY TO TWENTIETH CENTURY





### AFTERTHOUGHTS

Francis Winstead, born 1758 in Northumberland County, VA, eleventh child of Samuel and Winefred Winstead, was omitted in the list of children. However I did pick him up in the pedigree, pages 86 and 87.

I noticed several typographical mistakes after the book arrived from the printer. Hopefully the mistakes will not detract from the intent of the book; which was to give our pedigree of these eight different families, and help for those who are interested in joining any of the societies such as the DAR, SAR, Huguenots, Civil War Society, etc.

My sincere appreciation and thanks are sent to you for ordering a book. I hope you enjoy it, and any additional family history that you have to share or would be willing to send to me would be welcome. Also, a letter is welcome concerning your opinion about the book.

Thank you.

Gloria West

---



# AMYX AND ALLIED ANCESTORS

SIXTEENTH CENTURY TO TWENTIETH CENTURY

By

Gloria Rice West

*Dad's Blessings  
Gloria Rice West*



## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
Table of Contents . . . . .	1
Copywrite . . . . .	2
Dedication . . . . .	3
About the Author . . . . .	4
Preface . . . . .	5
Acknowledgments . . . . .	6

### CHAPTERS:

I.	Historic Fincastle . . . . .	7
II.	Our Grandsire, Matthew Amyx . . . . .	9
III.	Second Generation . . . . .	14
IV.	Third Generation . . . . .	26
V.	Fourth Generation . . . . .	32
VI.	Fifth Generation . . . . .	43
VII.	Sixth Generation . . . . .	51
VIII.	Henry Wax . . . . .	75
IX.	Winstead Family . . . . .	82
X.	Pearson Family . . . . .	91
XI.	Trent Family . . . . .	106
XII.	Seale Family . . . . .	113
XIII.	Brewer Family . . . . .	119
XIV.	Lanier Family . . . . .	135
XV.	Reflections . . . . .	143



PRODUCE AND PRESERVE PUBLISHING COMPANY  
ROY & GLORIA WEST  
1204 KINGSTON DRIVE  
YUKON, OK 73099  
~~(405) 534-6551~~

1(405)-265-2776

Correspondence and orders may be sent to:

Gloria Jean Rice West  
1204 Kingston Drive  
Yukon, OK 73099



## DEDICATION

To my children and grand-children in memory of my Mother, Myrtle Marie Amyx Rice.

## ANCESTORS

If you could see your ancestors all standing in a row,  
would you be proud of them, or don't you know?

Some strange discoveries are made in climbing family trees;  
and some of them, you know, do not particularly please.

If you could see your ancestors all standing in a row,  
there might be some of them you wouldn't want to know.

But here's another question, which requires a different view.

If you could meet your ancestors, would they be proud of you?

A good name is more desirable than great riches; to be esteemed better  
than silver or gold. Proverbs 22:1



MYRTLE MARIE AMYX RICE  
Eightieth Birthday  
February 2, 1981





## ABOUT THE AUTHOR

On January 10, 1942, on a farm in Eldorado, Oklahoma, Gloria Jean Rice was born; the seventh of eight children, to William Clinton and Myrtle Marie (Amyx) Rice. She married Roy E. West April 27, 1959. They moved to Augusta, Kansas and a year later back to Oklahoma. They have four beautiful children: Debra Hignite, Sarah Doherty, Chris West, and Laura Miller; and eight wonderful grandchildren, to whom this book is dedicated.

Gloria attended and graduated, Summa Cum Laude, from El Reno Jr. College in 1978. Presently she is employed by AT&T with twenty years service in Oklahoma City. Her interests are: Church, Genealogy, family, and home. She is active in the Daughters of American Revolution, (D.A.R.), and the Huguenot Society. Hopefully this book will help those of you who are interested, to become members of DAR, SAR, Huguenot Society and any of the Societies you are eligible for.



## P R E F A C E

Genealogy has become an increasingly popular pastime and interesting hobby for many people. With all of the modern advanced technology it is much easier today to accumulate, research, and store data about one's ancestors.

It is my pleasure to take you on a journey into the past and bring you up to the present, introducing you to who our ancestors were, what they did, where they came from and lived, and what they became. With much joy, appreciation, and satisfaction, I've had the opportunity to meet several cousins who have written books, researched and documented family history; and most of all, shared charts, pedigrees, and exchanged information with me.

My primary purpose in producing and publishing the history of our ancestors is to give our family background. These families were religious, intelligent, and noble. They were persecuted, principled, pioneering, people with the foresight and determination to provide for their children and descendants a greater opportunity in a better world. We can be proud of every family as each one had their own particular beliefs, values, religion, education, and occupation. Each of these families contributed greatly to our "American Heritage"; producing generations that helped to preserve what they envisioned and purposed. How they must have prayed for, suffered for, struggled for, fought for, and yes---DIED for, that eventuality.

Hopefully you will enjoy reading about your ancestors as much as I have enjoyed researching, compiling, and writing it. To my descendants and the generations to come, may you appreciate my effort to impart to you the history contained herein. I've tried to keep it accurate and interesting. My sincere apologies for the mistakes which may have occurred within.



## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

This book was written with the encouragement of my husband, Roy West. Christmas of 1991, Roy, Laura, Mark, Savannah, and I were on a historical trip. When we spent the night in Richmond, VA., Roy looked in the telephone book to see if he could find an Amyx. He found a Michael R. Amyx listed, and I called him. That was the beginning of my so-called "good fortune". I would like to thank Michael Amyx for the 53 pages of genealogy that he sent me, which enabled me to start my research on the Amyx family in Fincastle, Virginia. I want to thank Laura, my daughter, who took Roy and me to Fincastle in the summer of 1992, to start my research. We had a glorious time finding all the wealth of information there where our history started.

I want to acknowledge Roy Amyx who told me where to go in Tennessee to find our Amyx family. Earl Cole cannot be ignored, as he is responsible for all of my information on the wives of each Amyx grandfather back to Matthew Amyx, and the parents of each grandmother. His help enabled me to know the Allied family's names to research. Edna Jones of Tyner, KY gave me most of the information on our KY second-great grandparents, Samuel and Mary Winstead Amyx, and their descendants. Edna also loaned me her copies of the Seale and Greene books by Alton Greene. Greatly appreciated is W. H. Amyx's contribution of Wm. Harvey and Orlene's list of descendants.

I must thank my Brewer cousins, Geneva Hopkins and Claris Brewer Barrett for their invaluable material they sent to me, along with the pictures of the Brewer grandfather's graves. Claris is responsible for enabling me to locate the author of the LONG BREWER LINE, and she sent me a booklet on AMBROSE BREWER.

Hallie Garner is an invaluable informant as she gave me the names of the authors of the Henry Wax book and the Trent book. Raymond Dewey's work on the Wax book is excellent. Without our cousin, Mary Thelma Cloud's interest and desire to finish her brother's effort to write a book on the Trent's, we would not have that history recorded. I appreciate her hard work and interesting book. Ben Brewer is greatly to be appreciated and complemented on his outstanding work on the Brewer book and his research of our Lanier family. We are greatly indebted to him for his effort to research and preserve our heritage.

I would like to mention Martha Winstead who is struggling and striving to locate all of our Winsteds to preserve their history and lineage. Peggy Cook, our Winstead cousin in Rogersville was a valuable source of information. There were several Pearson cousins who helped me; Beulah Imhoff, Bettina Pearson Burns, Dorothy Stanfield, and Carolyn Pearson; but last and not least is Earl Cole, who helped me with this line too.

My sisters and my brother are genuinely appreciated for their stories and encouragement. I want to thank my sister-in-law, Margie, for her beautiful story for Lewis. I would like to thank Nancy for getting me interested in family history many years ago, when she and her husband started corresponding with Earl Cole and acquired our first knowledge of our Amyx And Allied Ancestors.

Potter County Courthouse, Hot Springs, Virginia, 1772









## CHAPTER ONE

# HISTORIC FINCASTLE

Lying approximately twenty miles north of Roanoke, Virginia on US highway 220, is the charming colonial town of Fincastle; which for years was the county seat of Botetourt County. Now it is a quiet, quaint village of 400 residents; but Fincastle, Virginia remains a nostalgic museum of American architecture from the late 1700's through the Twentieth Century.

Botetourt County held it's first meeting of the county court in 1770. In 1772 the Virginia House of Burgesses passed an act officially incorporating the new town, naming it in honor of George, Lord Fincastle, son of Lord Dunmore, Lieutenant Governor of Virginia. Botetourt County was named for Norborne Berkley, Lord Botetourt, Governor General of Virginia from 1768 to 1770.<sup>1</sup>

Fincastle sits in a beautiful valley snuggled close to the Blue Ridge Mountains. With steepled churches, and it's historic colonial buildings, there is an atmosphere which almost makes you feel like you have stepped back into history; which is richly imbedded in the archives, cemeteries, and hearts of descendants of it's long gone founders. This little town contained all that was necessary at that time to develop into a prosperous commercial village. It was situated at the crossroads of the "Great Valley Road" that extended from Pennsylvania to North Carolina. A large water spring was a gathering place for travelers, since the earliest day of the trans-Blue Ridge Indian trade, and provided power for a grist mill. Henry Wax, one of our great grandfathers who fought in the American Revolutionary War, at one time owned this mill.

One can feel great pride in knowing our great grandfathers were instrumental in the development of Fincastle. They helped build roads, paid tithes, fought in the French-Indian War and the American Revolutionary War, farmed, raised families, and were prosperous merchants in this historic colonial town.

By the mid 1770's, Fincastle's streets were plotted, a court house, jail, and church houses erected; and taverns, ordinaries, tanneries, and distilleries were in operation. Smiths, wagon makers, saddlers, and merchants soon followed, and Fincastle became an important trading center. Commerce was not the primary importance of Fincastle. It was a seat of Government.

From 1770 into the Revolutionary War, Fincastle was the center of government for a vast tract of land that included the entirety of the present state of Kentucky, most of West Virginia, Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois. The county land books are still a rich depository of many original land deeds to the rich farm lands of Kentucky to the Ohio Valley. George Washington, Patrick Henry, Thomas Jefferson, and other prominent Virginians interested in Virginia's western lands appeared in Fincastle or sent agents to lay

---

<sup>1</sup>Historic Va. Inc. p. 1.

claim to vast tracts of wilderness lands; while thousands of less prominent colonials like our forebears, the English, Scotch-Irish, and Germans with their African bondsmen passed through on their way to lay claims further down the Valley. Fincastle declined as a seat of government in the late 18th century, but remained a prosperous commercial town. Thomas Jefferson is given credit for designing the plans for the courthouse. Botetourt County, formed in 1770, was the last of the Mother counties of Virginia. In 1777 Fincastle County went out of existence.

Today, historic Fincastle has tree-lined streets, flagstone sidewalks, and quaint cottages, all adding nostalgia and charm to the colonial village. There is an old log cabin on church street. Existing for over two hundred years, Fincastle uniquely reflects the architecture, life, and times of by-gone years. Cemeteries and church yards are full of the graves and monuments of important people who helped carve out a town, county, state, and nation for their descendants. It is a privilege to know our AMYX ancestors and some of our allied families were involved in the mainstream of this everyday life and setting of beautiful Botetourt County. We can appreciate our national and ancestral heritage. It is with great pride that we can claim to be descendants of men such as Matthew, Samuel, and Isaac Amyx; Henry Wax, and the Boyers, Haristons, and Geschwinds. We might even mention the wives of these men as great heroines, due to the difficult times in which they lived. Yes, our history, both national and ancestral, is richly imbedded in the "Old Province of Virginia."

Records were kept early, as the English were quick to establish the court and church in the new country. Our Amyxs and allied family's records are found in the early chronicles of Fincastle, Botetourt County, Virginia. Bedford and Roanoke Counties contain documents and records on these families. Books were written about these early "colonials" of which a few mention our families. It is with great pride and personal satisfaction that I have researched our families, and wish to convey to you the story of our ancestors who had to sacrifice, endure hard work, struggle, fight, pray; and realize they too, experienced failures, successes, and had dreams and aspirations just as we do today.



## CHAPTER TWO

## OUR GRANDSIRE, MATTHEW AMYX

Various spellings of the name AMYX have been found in legal documents. A few are: Emacks, Amacks, Amos, Amox, Amick, and Aumack. The name is projected to be German, originating in Hiedelberg, Germany. Dating back to 1814 in the will of our fourth great grandfather, Samuel Amyx, Sr. of Fincastle, we find the name spelled "AMYX." Thus it has been, since then, spelled Amyx, an unusual and fascinating name. Everyone with this spelling probably descended from Matthew Amyx of Fincastle, Virginia.

The name Amyx could be a derivative of am, ames, or amis (friend). Ame is a pet form of amery; which means to work or rule. Ames is a variant of Eames which means: "the son of the uncle" in England.<sup>2</sup>

Matthew Amyx, Sr. was born in 1715 and died in 1779. One source gives his wife's name to be Mary. Matthew had three sons and one daughter. Matthew was a proven yeoman. In Black's Dictionary of Law we find that a yeoman in English law was a commoner; a free-holder under the rank of gentleman. (Cowell.) A man who has free land of forty shillings by the year; who was anciently thereby qualified to serve on juries, vote for knights of the shire; and do any other act, where the law requires one that is "probus et legalis homo". 1 Bl. Comm. 406, 407.

It is with much hesitation that I would even venture to say where Matthew originated from. I find too much conflicting data. However, there are two different opinions held by two different authors. Matthew is referred to as "German" in Kegley's Virginia Frontier, page 520. In Lyman Chalkey's Chronicles of Scotch-Irish Settlement, we find our Amyxs mentioned.

Speculation and hearsay is our only criteria, as at this time no one can definitely say where Matthew came from. My own belief is that he came from Holland or England, but I'll keep the reasons to myself. Our Amyx ancestors have always claimed to be Black Dutch. However, we shall solely rely only upon the documented evidence to bring the historical facts and story of our colonial ancestor, Matthew Amyx (Amacks) into perspective.

It is with great pleasure I have researched, studied, and attempted to relate this story. Hopefully, you can appreciate my attempts, however non-professional they appear. I do not claim to be a professional historian or genealogist, just enthusiastic about our heritage; and grateful to learn who our ancestors were, where they lived, what they did, and where they all went.

Picking up the fragments and putting them together is very interesting; it's like a big puzzle. Finally you begin to see more of their story, and their life becomes more real. These were people with

---

<sup>2</sup>The American Dictionary.



goals, ambitions, desires, troubles and families. Families that helped form the making of our great country. Do we know how they struggled, suffered, fought, prayed, and died? Let's imagine then, we are in a new country; maybe not even able to speak English, with little money, no home, no family, no friends, just -- alone, and trying to start our own "Destiny in America"! Did we only have one Amyx ancestor immigrant? I believe so. The mystery surrounds Matthew Amyx until someone discovers where he came from.

Matthew's will was proven and probated April of 1779 in Botetourt County, Fincastle, Virginia. The will is found in Virginia Wills, written by Clayton Terrance, and published by Baltimore Genealogical Publishing Company. Following is Matthew's will found in B--WBA-109, 4-1-1779:

In The Name of God Amen, the 9th Day of March in the Year of our Lord 1776. I Matthew Emack, Yeoman of Botetourt County Virginia being of perfect mind and memory thanks be given unto God therefore willing unto me the immortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die do make and ordain this my last will and testament that is to say principally and first of all I give and recommend my Soul into the Hands of God that gave it and for my body I recommend it to the Earth to be buried in a Christian like and decent manner for desecration of my \_\_\_\_? nothing doubting but at the general resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God. As touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give devise and dispose of the same in the following manner and form \_\_\_\_\_. I promise it is my will and I do order that in the first place all my just debts and funeral charges be paid and satisfied.

Item. I give and bequeath to my oldest son James one English Shilling.

Item. I give and bequeath to my son Matthew and Samuel my land I now live on to be equally divided between them both to them their heirs and assigns.

Item. I give and bequeath to my son Matthew one gray horse and one gray mare.

Item. I give to my son Samuel one Sorrel mare and one colt and one Sorrel horse.

Item. I give and bequeath my stock of cattle to be equally divided between my son, Matthew and Samuel.

Item. I give and bequeath my stock of sheep and hogs to be divided between my son Matthew and Samuel.

Item. I also appoint my son-in-law James Smith my only and sole executor of this my last will and testament and all and singular the promises within mentioned and I do hereby disallow and disanull all and every other former will legatee and executor.

Ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament. In witness whereof I have set my hand and seal the day and year above written.

his  
Matthew     ^     Emacks     seal  
mark

In Kegley's Virginia Frontier by F. B. Kegley, we find records of Matthew Emacks (German, now Amyx) came to Welshman's Run in 1764. Page 126 - Order Book #10, Oct 21, 1765, Matthew Emacks returned to live in Bedford County, Virginia. Anne Lowery Worrell's book, Over the Mountain Men, shows Matthew's will to be proven and shows him to be a large land owner. She lists his Children: James, Matthew, Samuel, and son-in-law, James Smith. Andrew is not listed as an heir in Matthew's will; but there are records claiming Andrew to be a son. In Annals of Southwest Virginia, Lewis Preston Summers list the American Revolutionary War soldiers. Here he names brothers, Matthew, Jr., Samuel, and Andrew Amyx. Page 1380. Andrew Amyx was executor of James' and Samuel's estates.

"In 1745 King George II granted Henry McCullough eight tracts of land in the province of NC, each tract containing twelve hundred and fifty acres. Parcels of this land was sold to Peter Amick, descendant of James Amack (Amyx)

The Amyx's who settled in these parts can be traced back to Matthew Amick, Sr. (Amicks, Amyx, Amix). The names spelled in these different ways appear in the same legal documents of Matthew Amick who lived in Botetourt County, Fincastle, Virginia; and the following records can be found about him: The Court records of Botetourt County show that he was released April 9th, 1771, from road work on account of his age. His wife's name was Mary, nothing more known."

Here are the children named in these records found in Register of Deeds, Rowan County, NC., Book 1-7. Note that his daughter was not listed as a child, probably having deceased. Following are his children given in these records:

1. Matthew M. Amick, Jr., (Amyx, Amacks), soldier of the Revolution; pension records show that he was granted a pension May 10, 1786, of 12 pounds per year for being wounded in the battle of Guilford Court House. He died at Burkesville Ky. April 1832. On January 9, 1787 Matthew Amick Sr. deeded to Matthew M. Amick (my son) and wife Catherine 395 acres in Botetourt County Virginia. Shortly after this, Matthew M. left taking up his residence in Guilford County, NC. February 7, 1806, Samuel Amick, a brother of Matthew M. and son of Matthew Sr. surveyed the same land of 395 acres, and it now belongs to Samuel. Known children of Matthew Amick, Jr. are:

A Peter: born Guilford Co. Feb. 24, 1784. Married Martha Black. They had eleven children--six born in NC and five in Indiana. Peter moved on



November 21st, 1818 to Clark County Indiana. These records were taken from Peter Amick Bible, which was handed down to George Amyx.

B Nickolas: Born December 5, 1779. Married Sarah Faust.

C Margaret Amick: Born September 19, 1796.

D Joel

E Matthew J: Born 1880. Married Jane Fawbush.

2. Andrew Amick: Lived and died in Botetourt County Virginia. Some of his descendants settled in Kentucky.
3. Samuel Amick : Lived and died in Botetourt County. Andrew administered and settled the estate of Samuel.
4. James Amick: Lived and died in Botetourt County Virginia. Andrew administered and settled the estate of James.

In July of 1992, Laura, my daughter; my husband, Roy, and I, made our first historical research trip to Fincastle. While in the library we found an interesting document and historical map lending to data, and an article of privileged keepsake. This map showed Matthew Amyx's homestead on Welshman's Run in 1749. This map was researched and documented by Charles T. Burton.

Robert Douthat Stoner's Seedbed of the Republic disclosed our actual earliest recording. He records Matthew Amyx to have settled on Welshman's Creek in Roanoke, Virginia in 1748. Here Matthew took up less than one hundred acres, but he had other land holdings. Later Stoner reports Matthew moving to Bedford County Virginia.

By January 21, 1765, Matthew Emacks Sr. is living in Bedford County. On May 25, 1767, Matthew is shown to have owned three hundred acres on Creeley's Branch as early as February 10, 1764. It was surveyed by William Preston.

Legal action and court records naming our Matthew Amyx were found in the book Annals of Southwest Virginia - 1769-1800 by Lewis Preston Summers; reprinted in 1970 by the Genealogical Publishing Company Incorporated, Baltimore. In Vol. I Botetourt County the minutes of county court 1769-1800 a court was held the 9th of April, 1771. On the motion of Matthew Amacks, it is ordered that he be exempted in the future from the payment of parish and county levies on account of his age and other distressing circumstances in his family.

Whatever happened to his wife is not disclosed. Also his daughter's name is not known but she married James Smith, witness and executor to Matthew's last will and testament. Matthew and his sons all worked on the roads. An interesting account given by Lyman Chalkley in his Chronicles of the Scotch-Irish Settlement in Virginia, 1745-1800 published by the Baltimore Genealogical Publishing Company

records this: "Amyx-Emoch - etc.; Vol. I, page 90 - order book VII., May 23, 1761. Ervin Patterson vs. Matthew Emack - plaintiff - having died since last court."

In Botetourt County and It's Men by Charles T. Burton, 1770-1777; an index to titheables lists Amix, Emux, etc.; Matthew.



## CHAPTER THREE

## SECOND GENERATION

James Melton Amyx {2}{Matthew 1} was born ca 1740, probably in French Indian territory. Date of death not known, however, Andrew Amyx was administrator of James Amyx' estate and the "account of the sales of the estate of James Amyx, deceased", was returned to court by Andrew Amyx and ordered to be recorded in 1816. James had two sons: Tilman, born 1808, and Peter Henry, born 1812 and died 1886. This information about these two sons was passed on to me by Earl Cole; however, he seems to be up in age just to now be having these children, so I am wondering if these might have been his grandchildren. I do not know any thing else about Tilman. Peter Henry had four sons:

A: John William, b.1839-d.1910. He had five children:

- a. Asa b.1866
- b. Fred b.1867
- c. Henry b.1872
- d. Raleigh b.1881
- e. Joseph

B. James Milton, b.1841-d.1908. He had at least four sons:

- a. Philip Henry, b.1872 - d.1932
  - a. James William
  - b. Roy Allen
  - c. Olive
  - d. Theodore
  - e. infant son
  - f. infant son
- b. Peter Henry, b.1877 - d.1943
  - a. Arkie
  - b. Arlie
- c. Isaac Sargent, b.1879 - 1950
  - a. Arville A.
  - b. Orbie
  - c. Emanuel Elmer
  - d. Raymond
  - e. Kenneth Wayne
  - f. Roy Lee
  - g. Curtis V.
- d. Chester Authur, b.1882 - d.1931
  - a. Norman L.

C. Gardner Lewis, born 1852, died 1852.

D. Henry Baskum, born 1857, died 1935.

- a. Frank

- b. Edmund
- c. James Melton
- d. Thomas Harrison
- e. Fred Hopkins

In Kegley's Virginia Frontier<sup>3</sup> on page 289 the date of April 1764 reveals James employed as a private for the defense of Roanoke Frontier under Col. Andrew Lewis. It is also known that James was left one English Shilling in his Father's will. Page 294 and 296 of this same book shows where James was given militia pay in 1765 and withdrew from Augusta County Virginia to North Carolina on May 25, 1765. In Lyman Chalkey's book , Chronicles of Scotch-Irish Settlement of Virginia Vol. I, page 430 he shows James Amacks, a soldier, lived in Bedford County in 1765. James Amick lived and died in Botetourt County, Virginia. Andrew Amyx, administered and settled his estate.

In Virginia Colonial Militia 1751 - 1776 edited by William Armstrong Crozier, on page 77, can be found a list with James Amox of Augusta County - 1759, to be a Captain. In Chronicles of the Scotch-Irish Settlement in Virginia, 1745-1800, written by Lyman Chalkey, pages 1 and 2, Book VII, on November 22, 1762 (435) Thorp and Stapps vs. James Emacks - plaintiff - having died since last court. On page 332 the county court records shows a judgment May 1765 (a) Captain Wm. English vs. James Emacks - account 1760, at Fort Frederick, Written 28th March 1765. Defendant lives in Bedford. Page 340, May 1765, (a) Dunbar vs. Emacks - James Emacks - a soldier in 1765 in Bedford. Taxpayers list in Botetourt County Virginia - - - James Amix - - - no white titheables, slaves over 12, or horses shown.

A copy of James Amyx's inventory and will can be found in Book C, pp. 32, in the Botetourt Courthouse at Fincastle, Virginia.

---

<sup>3</sup>Kegley's Virginia Frontier.



## MATTHEW AMYX

Matthew Amyx, Jr., {2} Matthew {1} was born ca. 1753 in Virginia. A Bible gives another date of 1751. He died March 12, 1832 in Burkesville, Kentucky. He served in the American Revolutionary War and was wounded in the Battle at Guilford in North Carolina. He received a pension of 12 pounds per year. His deed gives his wife's name as Catherine. In Summers Annals of Southwest Virginia on page 561, can be found this reference material. Grantor-Matthew Amacks, Sr., -----Grantee-Matthew Amacks, Jr. 395 acres.

His children are listed above under Matthew, Sr. However, I would like to include some more information on his son Matthew Amyx, III. This Matthew was born April 15, 1778 and died September 30, 1860. He moved to Cumberland County Kentucky in 1818. His estate was settled in December of 1860 and on record in Cumberland County Kentucky. Matthew married Jane Fawbush, born August 10, 1780, died December 4, 1856. They are buried in the Amyx cemetery in Cumberland County Kentucky. Matthew, III and Jane had seven children.:

- A. Catherine Amyx, b. December 14, 1801, d. December 10, 1840. She married John Branstetter, son of Michael and Mary Branstetter.
- B. Priscilla Amyx, b. March 4, 1804, d. April 2, 1888. She was an old maid.
- C. Louis H. Amyx, b. March 25, 1806, d. July 31, 1889. He married in 1838 to Fathia J. Harvey, b. December 2, 1808, d. May 8, 1872. They are buried in Amyx cemetery in Willowshade, KY.
- D. Madison Amyx, b. December 4, 1808, d. June 5, 1880. Madison never married and he and his sister Priscilla lived together on the old homestead. They are buried in Willowshade Cemetery.
- E. Preston Amyx, b. February 22, 1811, d. April 1, 1872. He married Eliza Harvey and they moved to Ozark County MO.
- F. Matthew Kimmins Amyx, b. August 26, 1815, d. July 7, 1893. He married Elizabeth Boatwright, b. September 24, 1821, d. August 31, 1891.
- G. Mary J. Amyx, b. March 5, 1820, d. October 23, 1825. Single.

I would like to interject a little story about Priscilla mentioned above who never married. In a note from Reverend (Uncle Joe) Ferguson comes this: Aunt Priskey Amyx was baptized on her bed by Joseph Ferguson November 12, 1882. J. H. Branstetter, Jacob G. Branstetter, Jonathan S. Leamon, R.D. Traw, C.C. Harvey, and N.G. Creacy, took hold of some sticks and placed under the plank her bed was on, and with M.A. Branstetter, to prevent strangulation, marched in the creek and dipped her under.

Matthew Kimmons Amyx mentioned above had two wives: Elizabeth Boatwright and Syrene Ann Lewis. He had several children but these are the ones I found:

- A. Mary F. Amyx, married John Stice and they had at least two children: William and Edward.
- B. Ambrose Crittendon who married Sara Elizabeth Debrey. They had at least three children: Mack, Susan, and Minerva.
- C. Catherine Jane Amyx who married John Creacy. They had: David, Sarah, Hattie, Rachel, and Lucy Ellen.
- D. Oliver Preston Amyx married but did not have any children.
- E. Martha Ann Amyx married Marion Shelly. They had one son, Marvin.
- F. Matthew Louis Amyx married Jemima Clem. They four children: Roy, Ethel, Hugh, and Luda.

Peter Amyx{3}Matthew, Jr.{2}Matthew, Sr.{1} could be called the land baron of Eastern Kentucky. Born in Guilford County, North Carolina in 1784, he died in Morgan County in 1865, and in the years between those dates surveyed thousands of acres of land in Eastern Kentucky for others, at the same time claiming vast boundaries for himself.

Amyx was son of Matthew Amick (Amyx), soldier of the Revolutionary War who was wounded in the Battle of Guilford courthouse and died at Burkesville, Kentucky in 1832. At the time Amyx moved westward through Kentucky, Morgan County still was a part of Floyd County and early records indicate he was important in the creation of Morgan in 1822-23. He helped begin White Oak Christian Church in about 1828 following his conversion by "Raccoon" John Smith, a disciple of Alexander Campbell and Barton Stone.

Amyx served as deputy surveyor in Floyd County a number of years and magistrate. He was elected surveyor in 1819 and sworn into office August 17. Prior to his becoming a land surveyor in Eastern Kentucky, Amyx served as Constable in Madison district which then encompassed most of the present Morgan County. The pioneer served his state, region, and Floyd and Morgan Counties in many important ways and later surveyed through the state northward to Cincinnati. According to noted Eastern Kentucky historian, Henry Scalf, Amyx's "mountain barony of land was so huge that it could not be properly cared for and it fell apart under the incessant harassment of settlers."

Peter Amyx's children were:

- A. Joseph H. Amyx who married Frances.
- B. William Amyx



C. Matthew J. Amyx, who married Elsie Jane Nickell.

D. James F. Amyx, who married Wyaha.

E. Nancy Amyx , who married Jesire Have--?.

F. Elizabeth Amyx, who married Watson Phipps.

G. Andrew "Andy" Amyx.

H. Angeline Amyx, who married James W. Whitt.

Peter was a surveyor by trade as well as a hunter and farmer, a good citizen and churchman. He was a Representative to Kentucky legislature from Floyd and Pike county in 1823. His descendants were widely distributed in the area he surveyed while it was a wilderness.

Matthew Amyx, Jr.'s., deed and will can be found in B--DB2-421. 12-19-1778, 395, Creeley Branch from Matthew Amacks, Sr. B WBA-109. 4-10-1770, one half of 395, from Matthew Amacks, Sr. B DB3-451. 1-9-1787, one half of 395, Creeley Br. to Samuel Amacks. Following is Matthew Jr.'s and his wife Catherine's deed:

This Indenture made the 9th day of January in the Year of our Lord one Thousand seven hundred and eighty seven between Matthew Amack, son of Matthew Amack deceased, and Katharine, his wife, of the one part and Samuel Amack his brother of the other part both of them of Botetourt County witnesseth that the said Matthew together with his said wife in compliance with his said Father's will and for and in consideration of the natural and brotherly affection that he bears to his said brother Samuel and for the further consideration of-----to them in hand paid the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge and thereof acquit the said Samuel hath bargained sold and \_\_\_\_? and by these presents they the said Matthew Amack and Katharine his wife do and each of them doth bargain sell give grant \_\_\_\_?and confirm unto the said Samuel Amack nearly half the tract of Land on which their Father lived and on which they now live near Creelys Gap in Botetourt County already laid off by agreement between the said parties and bounded as followeth. Beginning at a black oak in a line of the old survey running thence north one hundred and eight poles to three black oak saplings thence north forty two degrees west sixty poles to a pine on a ridge north ten degrees to a double black oak on a hill north seventy five degrees west sixty poles crossing a branch to a white oak by the mountain sixty-four degrees east two hundred poles to 2 white oak \_\_\_\_? and Hickory \_\_\_\_ 144P to the beg. and all houses, buildings, orchards, waterways, profits, commodities, hereditaments and appurtenances whatsoever to the said premises hereby granted or to any part thereof belonging or in any wise appertaining and the reversion and the reversions remainder and remainders rents \_\_\_\_ and profits thereof to have and to hold the said tract of more or less than one hundred and sixty acres of land and all and singular other the premises hereby granted unto the said Samuel Amack his heirs and assigns forever and for their behalf free and discharged from all encumbrances whatever in witness whereof the said Matthew Amack and Katharine his wife have hereunto set their hands and seals.

Their Hands and Seals:

Matthew Amack      SEAL

Catherine Amack      SEAL

Signed sealed delivered in the presence of: John Howard      Priscilla Hariston      James  
Smith

Memorandum: Quiet and peaceable possession and session of the within granted land, was  
had and delivered by the within named Matthew Amack unto the within mentioned Samuel  
Amack to hold and enjoy according to the tenor of the within grant.

\_\_\_ the presence of John Howard      Priscilla Harriston      James Smith

February Botetourt Court 1784

This indenture of Bargain and sale was acknowledged by the witnesses.

Matthew Amack and Catharine his wife to Samuel Amack, wife having been privily  
examined as the law directs and on the motion of the said Samuel admitted to record Attest:  
A. Smyth D.C.



## S A M U E L A M Y X

Samuel Amack{2}Matthew{1} was born in 1745 and died in 1819. Samuel is the second child, and son of Matthew Amyx, Sr. It was just recently that I learned who his wife was; although I had material to find it that I passed on to a cousin, Earl Cole. He was the one who discovered that Samuel and Matthew married sisters. Samuel married Eleanor Harriston (Harston) and Matthew married Katharine or Catharine Harriston (Harston). The parents of Elinor (Eleanor) and Catherine were Andrew and Elizabeth Harriston, or Hariston. I found evidence that Samuel served in the American Revolutionary War in Captain Paulings Militia, with his brother Matthew. Samuel also was assigned to road duty along with his brothers, and like his father before him. Samuel inherited half of his father's land and later bought his brother, Matthew's part. Andrew, Samuel's son eventually acquired most of his father, Samuel's land, as mentioned later in Andrew's will. In Andrew's will, we will see where he referred to his father's plantation, (which previously belonged to his grandfather, Matthew, Sr.). It is very interesting to be able to follow this land down to three generations.

Following is a letter from Earl:

Dear Gloria:

I hope that you had a nice Christmas and a happy New Year. I have found that our ancestor Samuel Amyx (1745-1819) married Elinor Hariston, Harstone, Hariston; daughter of Andrew and Elizabeth Hariston. Also Matthew Amyx (1751-1832), Samuel's brother married Catharine Hariston, daughter of Andrew and Elizabeth Hariston. These two brothers married sisters sometimes between 1771 and 1784. I did not find marriage records but found data in land deeds for Bedford County Virginia. I will send more details later.

Sincerely,

Earl Cole

I am much indebted to Earl as he has supplied so much valuable information to me about all of the Amyxs and allied families. There are many other cousins listed in my acknowledgments, that I shall not mention here.

Samuel Amyx, the son of Matthew, Sr. is the son of main concern to the author, as he is the one that I descended from. Hopefully I can present a profile of Samuel and you will be able to identify with him, realize that he was very much alive, and make the past seem real to you.

Samuel and Eleanor had seven children:

- A. Susannah Amyx married Byrd Flurnay on May 13, 1818, daughter of Samuel, and bonded by Andrew Amyx. Contested by Samuel Amyx, father on May 5, 1818. Witness Andrew Amyx.
- B. Elinor Amyx, don't know who she married or if she did.
- C. Esther Amyx married Richard Lamb on November 19, 1813. Bonded by Matthew Amyx. It was contested.
- D. Elizabeth Amyx married Robert Preston June 10, 1810. Bonded by Samuel Amyx, the Father. The minister was John Helms.
- E. Peggy Amyx married Mark Taylor on December 1, 1808. The minister was Edward Mitchell.
- F. Andrew Amyx married Elizabeth Taylor. He was born in 1764 in Fincastle, Virginia. Andrew and Elizabeth had nine children:
  - a. Luticia
  - b. Ameliah or Emeling
  - c. Haireston, b.1818, d.1890
  - d. Eleanor
  - e. Asenath
  - f. Matthew T.
  - g. Andrew
  - h. Fleming md. Augusta Amelia Delomia
  - i. Elizabeth md. John Moliler
- G. Isaac Amyx who married Mary (Polly) Boyer. Information on Isaac will be picked up later as he is of primary interest to the author.

In Early Marriages, Wills and some Revolutionary War Records of Botetourt County, Virginia by Anne Lowery Worrell, are these records of some early settlers.

Samuel Amyx's will is found in will book C pp. 158. His children are found in Worrell's book which gives his will. In the 1785 Enumeration of Botetourt County, Virginia, is a list with Samuel Emox

5 1 2

In A Seed-Bed of the Republic by Robert D. Stoner on page 125, Samuel Amacks is assigned to Captain Pauling's Company in Botetourt County prior to the Revolutionary War; which reads: Ordered that the following persons in Capt. Pauling's Company, viz.: Henry Pawling, Joseph Richardson, Daniel Howell, Thomas Dalzeil, Ezekiel Howard, Thomas West, Benn. West, Resin West, Abner Howell, David Jones, James Steward, Jr., Saml. Amacks, Saml. Steward, Saml. Depew, Peter Cline, to be considered as the 16th district.



In Kegley's Virginia Frontier, on page 522: In 1783 the residents of Buffalo, or Tinkers Creek and Glade Creek belonged to Captain Pauling's Company of Militia.

#### CAPTAIN PAULING'S COMPANY

Matthew Amack -----3 horses-----4 cattle----0 slaves---0 tithables

Samuel Amack-----2 horses-----4 cattle----0 slaves---0 tithables.

Captain Pauling's district included the homes around the Great Lick, on Glade Creek and the east side of Tinker Creek. The tithables of John Stewart, Thomas Madison, William Graham, William Carvin, Hugh Mills, James Goodman, Matthew Amacks, Samuel Amacks, Thomas Welsh, Andrew Harrison, James Stewart, John Depew, John Howard, William Brechnald, ordered to work on this road--James Robinson's, William Breckenridge's and Martin Baker's tithables to be added. John Depew, surveyor of the Road from John Howard's to the Big Lick.

Following is a list of books and pages listing our Amyx ancestors:

Kegley's Virginia Frontier, pages 520, 296, 289, 294, 543, 541, 538, and 549.

Over the Mountain Men, by Anne Lowery Worrell: pages 543, 522.

Seed-Bed of the Republic by Robert Douthat Stoner: pages 121, 141, 125, 134, and 476.

Annals of Southwest Virginia by Summers: page 1380.

Early Marriages, Wills, and Some Revolutionary Records, Botetourt County Virginia, by Anne Lowery Worrell.

Botetourt County Virginia and It's Men, 1780-1786, by Charles T. Burton, page 272.

In the Foothills of the Cumberland by Harlan R. Brown, page 87.

The Big Sandy Valley, by Willard Rouse Jillison, page 129.

My presentation of Samuel's life and death would not be complete without sharing his last will and testament with you:

SAMUEL AMYX WILL: In the name of God Amen:

I Samuel Amyx being a citizen of the county of Botetourt and State of Virginia do make and ordain and declare this instrument of writing to be my last will and testament revoking all others. In promises all my debts of which there are but few and none of magnitude are to

be punctually and speedily paid and the legacies herein after \_\_\_\_\_?are to be discharged as soon as circumstances will permit and in the manner directed. It is my will and desire that while I live to have a full and gentle maintenance out of my estate and to have a decent burial.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my son Isaac Amyx one hundred and twenty dollars to him and his heirs forever.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my son Andrew Amyx one hundred and twenty dollars to him and his heirs forever.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my daughter Peggy Taylor one hundred dollars to her and her heirs forever.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my daughter Elizabeth Preston one hundred dollars to her and her heirs forever.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my daughter Esther Lamb two hundred dollars to her and her heirs forever.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my daughter Susannah Amyx one hundred and twenty dollars to her and her heirs forever.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my daughter Elinor Amyx one hundred and twenty dollars to her and her heirs forever. I shall direct the sum that I have left to my children as but a small part out of what my land will fetch at public sale. I do hereby order and direct my Executor and administrators to take charge in this my will to see that my land do sell for near the worth in giving a small credit of about nine months. If any disputes should arise amongst the legacies concerning going to law it is my will and desire that there shall be two disinterested men chosen to settle it and if they cannot agree the third man to settle that business.

Item: I give and bequeath unto my daughter Susannah Amyx one feather bed and it's furniture.

Also I give and bequeath unto my daughter Elinor Amyx one feather bed and it's furniture. I do likewise give and bequeath unto my two daughters Susannah and Elinor Amyx my bureau or as the cabinet makers call it a \_\_\_\_\_ Secretary. Again it is my will that at my decease that there shall be a tomb stone fixed at the head of your Mother's grave and



another at your Father's. It is my will and desire that all my estate over and above the legacies shall be equally divided amongst all my sons and daughters living. If there is any money or bonds found in my house at my decease likewise I desire that there shall be an equal division made amongst the legacies. I do hereby appoint my son Andrew Amyx senior Executor and administrator of this my last will and Testament given under my hand and last Seal this the 5th day of May in the Year of our Lord 1818  
Samuel Amyx        SEAL

TESTE:

Alexander Trent

George Kipler

David Leamon

---

A M Y X S M I T H

---

?Amyx {2}Matthew, Sr.,{1} married James Smith. There is not much known about the daughter of Matthew, Sr. We know she married a James Smith because his name is given as a son-in-law and was executor of Matthew's will.

## CHAPTER FOUR

### THIRD GENERATION

Isaac Amyx{3}Samuel {2} Matthew, Sr.,{1}is of primary interest to the author as he is who I descended from. Isaac Amyx was born ca. 1775 in Botetourt County Virginia. He died in 1850 in Hawkins Tennessee. He married Mary (Polly) Boyer, a daughter of Catherine Wax Boyer Price, daughter of Henry Wax from Fincastle, Botetourt County Virginia. More will be given about Henry Wax in the Wax Chapter. There has been much controversy about Mary Boyer being Mary Price; but she is listed in her grandfather, Henry Wax's will, as Mary Boyer, a granddaughter. Mary's and Isaac's marriage license has her father's name on it. 1803----Amox (Emacks) md. Polly Boyer.<sup>4</sup> The marriage license of Isaac and Mary Boyer is found on page 3 of Anne Lowery Worrell's book, Early Marriages, Wills and Some Revolutionary War Records in Botetourt County, Virginia. They married on August 17, 1803.

Mary Boyer Amyx was born in 1786 and died in 1872. Isaac and Mary followed her Mother and family to Tennessee. Catherine Wax Boyer married Henry Price, Sr. August 14, 1787. Henry sold his land in Botetourt County and moved to Tennessee. He bought some land there and put in his crops. He returned to Botetourt County to get his family, but died before he could return to Tennessee. Catherine and her family moved on to Tennessee. That is mainly the reason our Amyx's migrated to Tennessee. Much of the information concerning Isaac was given to me by Hallie Price Garner, of Dallas Texas. She is related through the Amyx, Trent, and Green families. Isaac and Mary had nine children:

- A. Samuel Amyx, born 1804, died 1888, married first to Fanny Mendenhall Kenner. They had one son, and divorced in March of 1826. He then married a widow by the name of Mary (Polly )Winstead Pace. They had twelve children; but they shall be listed in the fourth generation. Samuel and Mary are of primary interest to the author as they are the ancestors from which I descend.
- B. Mary (Polly) Amyx, born 1808, died?
- C. Eleanor (Ellen) Amyx, born 1812, married William Drinnon January 8, 1827. They had a daughter, Sarah Drinnon, born 1828. She married Jim Davis Price. There were probably more children, but this is all I have.
- D. Priscilla Amyx, born 1812, married to James M. Davis on March 29, 1833.
- E. Nancy Amyx, born 1815, married James Lawson.
- F. Elizabeth Amyx, born 1817, married Charles Snyder.
- G. Susan Amyx, born 1820, married Madison Jones.

---

<sup>4</sup>Isaac Amyx Marriage License, Fincastle, Botetourt County Courthouse, VA.



H. Lucinda Amyx, born 1821, married Lawrence Drinnon, ca. 1840.

I. Sarah Amyx, born July 17, 1825, died March 3, 1893, married George W. Davis March 7, 1845.

An abstract of Isaac Amyx's will reads:<sup>5</sup>

Amyx, Isaac, dated 13, October 1849

Proven Feb. Term 1850

My son, Samuel, my daughter, Elizabeth Snider (War Gap Road), my daughter, Polly Amyx, my daughter, Priscilla Davis, my wife, Mary. "Heirs" Elenor Amyx Drinnon, Nancy Amyx Lawson, Lucinda Amyx Drinnon, Susannah Amyx Jones and Sarah Amyx.

Wit: Rial Johns  
W. C. Wilder

(Pages 15-16) James Johnson

It is my desire to share the will in it's entirety. I found this in Rogersville, Tennessee last year on a research trip with my husband.

Will of Isaac Amyx:

October 13, 1849

State of Tennessee, Hawkins County

Proved February 1850

I, Isaac Amyx do make and publish this my last will and testament hereby revoking and making void all other wills by me at any time made.

First: I direct that my funeral expenses and my debts be paid as soon after my death as possible out of my money that I may die possessed of as my \_\_\_\_ into the hands of my executor.

Secondly: I give and bequeath to my son Samuel Amyx and his heirs the following boundary of land: Viz. Beginning at a white oak corner, running westwardly to the high bluff of the ridge and then with the west side of the ridge to the cross fence and with said fence to the apple orchard, and then to a sugar tree so as not to include any of said orchard, then south west to the top of a \_\_\_\_ there with the top of the \_\_\_\_ to the top of Clinch

---

<sup>5</sup>Hawkins County TN Will Book, I - II, pp. 2.

mountain and with the top of the mountain eastwardly to Samuel Amyx's line and with said line to Riley Winsteads line and thence to the beginning.

Thirdly: I give and bequeath to my daughter Elizabeth, now Elizabeth Snider and her heirs the following boundary of land: Viz.: Beginning on a dogwood, by beginning corner running thence northeast to hollow that covers down from James Goodman's field opposite to the spring branch where Samuel Amyx now lives. Thence southwardly to said spring branch and with the same to said Samuel Amyx's boundary to near the orchard. Thence westwardly to the War Gap road, thence with Charles Snider's line to the beginning.

Fourthly: I give and bequeath to my daughter Polly Amyx twenty acres of land on the upper end of my farm joining Polly Pearson's land.

Fifthly: I give and bequeath to my daughter Priscilla, now Priscilla Davis and her heirs a boundary of land, as follows: Beginning at the above named Amyx's and Snider's boundary near the orchard, thence southeast with Samuel Amyx's boundary to the top of Clinch Mountain. Thence westwardly with the top of the mountain to Samuel Amyx's line, Thence northwardly with said line to \_\_\_ Drinnen's line, thence with said line to Charles Snider's line, thence with said line to War Gap road and thence with said Snider's line to the beginning.

Sixthly: I direct that my wife Mary Amyx shall have a decent maintenance from the said Samuel, Elizabeth and Priscilla Amyx during her life, and I further direct that in one year after the death of my wife, Mary Amyx, that the aforementioned Samuel Amyx Elizabeth Snider and Priscilla Davis shall pay to the following named heirs: Five hundred dollars in good current bank notes according to the value of each of their boundaries of land afore named, Viz.:

To Elenor, now Elenor Drinnon, one hundred dollars.

To Nancy, now Nancy Lawson, one hundred dollars.

To Lucinda, now Lucinda Drinnon, one hundred dollars.

To Susannah, now Susannah Jones, one hundred dollars.

To Sarah, now Sarah Davis, one hundred dollars.

It is to be understood that the improvements on the afore named boundaries of land are not to be valued.

Seventhly: I give and bequeath to my wife, Mary Amyx all of my household and kitchen furniture, to dispose of as she may think proper.

Eighthly: I direct that all my personal property be sold on twelve months credit and the proceeds equally divided between all my above named children.

Lastly: I do hereby nominate and appoint my son Samuel Amyx my Executor. In witness whereof I do to this my will set my hand and seal, this 13" day of October 1849.  
Isaac Amyx SEAL

Signed, sealed and published in our presence and we have subscribed our names hereto in the presence of the testator, this 14" day of October, 1849.

Witnesses: Rial Johns, James Johnson, W. C. Wilder.

It is my desire to include the marriage license of Isaac and Mary Polly (Boyer) Amyx, due to much controversy and mistakes made in genealogy records. This document is recorded in the Botetourt County Courthouse.

"Know all men by these presents, that Isaac Amox and Henry Price hold firmly bound unto John Page Esquire, Governor of the Common wealth of Virginia, in the just and full sum of One Hundred and fifty dollars to be paid unto the said Governor this ----- in office for the use of the -----to which payment, well and truly to be made, we bind and -----heirs, executors and administrators, firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seal and dated this 17th day of August, 1803. The condition of the above obligation is such, that whence as there is a marriage shortly in time as to be had and solemnized between the above bound Isaac Amox and Polly Boyer, Daughter of Devault Boyer deceased. If therefore there is no lawful cause or -----to his trust this marriage then this obligation to be void other wise to remain in full force. Signed and delivered in the presence of:

S. Bowyer  
-----? SEAL

Isaac Amyx SEAL



## ANDREW AMYX

Andrew Amyx{3}Samuel{2}Matthew{1}, brother of Isaac Amyx, was born in 1760 and died in 1830. A copy of Andrew's will was recorded in Will Book E, pp. 64, in Botetourt County, Fincastle, Virginia. I would like to share this as he was a brother to our Grandfather Isaac. Samuel only had two boys. The will follows:

"Being in my perfect mind knowing that all men have once to die and this being my Last will and Testament, in the name of God amen.

Item: 1st All my funeral expenses to be paid.

Item: 2nd All my just debts to be paid.

Item: 3rd I will to my daughter Luticia Page one sorrel mare with two head of cattle and household and kitchen furniture now in her actual possession to her and to her heirs for ever.

Item: 4th I will to my son Flemming two hundred dollars and a sorrel horse saddle and bridle four years of his infant state now in possession of it all to him and his heirs forever and no more of my personal nor real estate not to the amount of one cent be given him more.

Item: 5th I will to my daughter Eleanor one hundred and thirty dollars with one good feather bed with all necessary covers and sheets now in her possession to her and her heirs for ever.

Item: 6th I will to my daughter Asenath one hundred and fifty dollars to her and her heirs forever.

Item: 7th I will to my daughter Elizabeth one hundred and fifty dollars to her and her heirs forever.

Item: 8th I will to my son Hairston one hundred and fifty dollars to him and his heirs forever.

Item: 9th I will to my son Matthew T. one hundred and fifty dollars to him and his heirs forever.

Item: 10th I will to my son Andrew one hundred and fifty dollars to him and his heirs forever.

Item: 11th I will to my daughter Emilea one hundred and fifty dollars to her and heirs forever.

This legacy I give to equal the young with the old children. This legacy will cover but a moderate part of my real estate the place whereon I live. The two mountain tracts will all stand clear of any encumbrances. I request my executors to see that my land be not sold at any sacrifice, it must be rented for 7 years before sold when my youngest child arrives at the age of 12 years. The plantation on the road may be rented for 7 years at not less than one hundred dollars a year and as much more as can be got. The house to always be rented. They must clover 15 acres every two years and if that cant be got let it rest but keep the house and lots around it rented. I leave my Fathers plantation to be sold as his will directs though

was prevented by the rest of the legatees as they were all then when I sold the personal property and all of age they would not agree that I should take less then 25 dollars per acre the sale I never could affect. They entered into an article of ten thousand dollars not to interrupt me under hand and save now filed in the clerks office. Since then I became the purchaser of their shares besides my own. My executor will examine my Fathers will as he gave different legacies and proportions in that as the will directs all the parts I purchased with all the advantages as my Fathers will made the difference. I bought Isaac Amix Claim, Richard Lamb and Esther his wife and Bird Flurney and Susanna, his wife. My personal property will perhaps pay all my debts but if it does not I want my executor to sell the old place for I think my four shares will pay every expense and leave considerable money if it should I want you to pay to my daughter Eleanor her legacy if you see she stand in need or any of the other of my daughters younger then Eleanor. My three sons Hariston and Matthew able to earn their victuals and clothes and in two years more three months schooling they would be worth. A year the rent must be applied so as to suit then several capacities so that my son Andrew and my daughter Emalinah be raised till they are able to work if any of my children die without -----then their portion shall be divided amongst the rest of my surviving children. Flemming to have no part. This will I wrote at many different time with my own hand just as I could find myself able to write. I appoint as my executors Esquire William McDurmad and John T. Anderson I -----one of my executors fast appointed. This will wrote and finished on the first day of January 1830.

Andrew Amix SEAL

Signed in presence of

-----? Andrew Amix will wrote with his own hand.

Daniel Leamon

Daniel \_\_ Kissler

At Botetourt March Court 1830 this instrument of writing purporting to be the last will and testament of Andrew Amix Decd. was this day exhibited in court and proven by the oath of Abraham Kissler, Daniel Leamon, and Daniel H. Kissler subscribing witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded.  
A copy tested F. Woltz DC

Note: Andrew refers to his estate and calls it a "plantation", which he refers to as his Father's plantation. His Father was Samuel Amyx, son of Matthew Amyx, Sr. I would like for you to recall that Samuel inherited his Father's land; which one half was willed to him, and he purchased his brother, Matthew's half. So we see Andrew Amyx is still in possession of the original land that Matthew Sr. had in Fincastle, Botetourt County, Virginia.



## CHAPTER FIVE

### FOURTH GENERATION

Samuel Amyx{4}Isaac{3}Samuel{2}Matthew{1}, born in 1804 in Botetourt County died in 1888 in Egypt, Kentucky, Jackson County, was the hardest grandfather to locate and find out anything about. He moved to Tennessee with his Father and Mother from Botetourt County. He married Fanny Mendenhall Kenner on March 2, 1826. They had one son, name unknown. She supposedly joined up with a religious group called the Shakers and took her son with her. Samuel divorced her and remarried a widow by the name of Mary (Polly) Winstead Pace, daughter of Matthew Winstead. Mary Winstead was born in 1810 and died in 1891. A Winstead chapter will be included later.

When I was trying to locate all of my Amyx grandfathers and grandmothers in order to join the DAR, I could not find where Samuel and Mary lived. I called Earl Cole and asked him where Samuel and Mary were buried in Tennessee. I knew that Isaac and Riley Samuel Amyx were buried in Tennessee, but I couldn't find anything out about the grandfather in between them. Earl told me they were buried in Jackson County, Kentucky in the Egypt, Kentucky cemetery.

I could not locate Egypt, Kentucky on the map, so I called the Court house in Jackson County, and was given a cousin's name that did research at the library there in Tyner, Kentucky. I got Edna Jones's telephone number and called her. She told me all about the Amyx's there in Jackson County and invited Roy and me to come and spend some time with her on our research trip in the summer of 1993. We went to see her and her sister-in-law, Charlotte Farmer, our cousin. Edna is a cousin by marriage, but knows more about the Amyx's than anyone other than Earl Cole.

Roy and I truly enjoyed our visit in Egypt, Kentucky, as we visited the grave site of Samuel and Mary Winstead Amyx. It is truly a wonderful feeling to be able to go back to where all of our grandfathers came from and find out all about them. Our grandfather, Samuel Amyx, moved to Kentucky from Tennessee during the Civil War. Some of his children moved back to Tennessee after the war and remained there in Hancock County. Our grandfather, Riley Samuel moved back after the war and lived and died in Hancock County. In the 1850 census of Tennessee Samuel and Mary are listed with eight of their children. Edna showed us where all of Samuel's children lived, and also where Samuel lived, although the house was long gone.

Before I list all of Samuel's children I would like to enclose a letter Edna Jones gave to me which describes our grandfather Samuel Amyx and the times in which he lived. The letter was dated April 16, 1975, from Mary Francis Amyx Smith to Edna Jones. It follows:

"The following information was given verbally by my Father William Edward Amyx, Sr., at his home in Shelbyville, Ky. September of 1946. Present and adding some new bits of family news, to me at least, was my father's cousin, Wilson Wilder, nicknamed "Wilse". He was visiting Dad for the afternoon from St. Mathews, Ky. He was or is, if alive, the son of Susan Amyx Wilder. Their conversation went like this, with some gentle prodding on my part, re Amyx history and from whence:



The Amyx brothers came from Botetourt County, Virginia, one brother continued westward and never heard from again, so far as Dad and Wilse knew. Samuel's first wife left him. Ran away taking their first and only child, an infant baby boy. He was never heard from again, and from the guarded speech of Dad or Wilse, plus looks exchanged, I gathered there was a third party involved. However I didn't dare press the subject, for fear their font of information would cease.

Much later Samuel married a young widow, Polly Pace. Here Wilse added "her maiden name was Polly Winstead. She came from Amsterdam, Holland, (possibly this is where our Black Dutch comes in), and she was a school teacher." Dad knew all of this except her maiden name and country of origin. He agreed and accepted it, after Wilse reminded him that Polly's accent and manners of speech was different from Samuel's and the others.

When I asked what country the Amyxs came from, Dad answered "Ireland". Wilse came in with, "Oh no they didn't. Amyx is not an Irish name for one thing." Dad's answer to that was, "Samuel had the old country manner of speech." Wilse with his wife, had made many trips abroad to Europe and the British Isles and told Dad the following.

"You can go into northeast England or most any smaller towns in England and the people's accent sounds exactly like Samuel's." Wilse also added pure guessing that "Amyx" could be a derivative of French "AM" meaning friend and that generations earlier could have migrated from France to England. This of course, nothing but conjecture.

However, I was to remember Wilse's remarks years later, when my husband was stationed in England with US Air Force. We lived in counties of Lincolnshire, Norfolk, and Suffolk, all in three years tour of duty. To my untrained ears, the village, market, and farming folks accent sounded Irish, at first. After awhile one adjusts and learns there is quite a difference. I also learned one must do homework state side before any research can be made in England.

The first Amyx could have sailed from Northern Ireland for America, when northern Ireland was completely Scots and English in 1600, and in the 1700s. Hence, the Scots-Irish, so called in our history. Mostly termed Scotch-Presbyterian. Ireland was sailing port for French Huguenots, Holland Dutch, Swiss, and some Germans during this period; fleeing from religious persecution in their homeland and England.

The last time my Dad, William Edward Amyx, Sr., saw his grandfather Samuel Amyx, was when he was 11 years old. It was the late summer of 1887 when Dad and Wilse were up there visiting Samuel and Polly Amyx. "Samuel was 84 years of age then" according to Dad and Wilse, and "very active and agile". Played pranks and teased the boys. Wilse added, "He loved children and had a great sense of humor".

They then went into description of how self reliant they were back then. Quite a community, wild game, tanned their own leather, and had deer skin suits and made their own shoes. Women did spinning and weaving. Only fabrics bought was for men's Sunday suits, (dress), and ladies finer dress fabrics, pepper and coffee, etc. at stores. Wilse and Dad's last visit up their probably late summer of 1887, as stated on page 3.

Some after thoughts etc. Wilse and Dad's information re: Amyx brothers leaving Botetourt County, VA. There were 3 or 4. Samuel, Peter, and the other one or two. I took it for granted they meant brothers of their grandfather Samuel. They could have been referring to Samuel's Father, Isaac and his brothers. Possibly."

End of letter.

I felt very privileged to be able to get my hands on a letter such as this, describing the life and times of my second great grandfather, Samuel Amyx. I hope you enjoyed it as much as I enjoyed it the first time I read it. I exclaimed to Roy, "Oh, Roy, I've got a real Daniel Boone grandpa, one that wore deer skin clothing and all." Jackson County lies West of Booneville, Owsley County, Kentucky. Our grandfather, Howell Cobb Brewer, is buried there and I have communicated with cousins there in Booneville on the Brewer side. So we have relatives all over Kentucky. In fact, many of the Amyx third generation men left Botetourt County and moved to Kentucky. In fact Matthew Jr. moved to Cumberland County Kentucky to live with his son Matthew, III.

While researching and corresponding with the Genealogical Society in Rogersville, Tennessee, a Winstead cousin "Peggy Cook", read my letters and story that I sent in to be printed in the Hawkins County Families book. She was editor of the book, and the Winstead Family Society "had been searching for descendants of Mary Winstead Amyx. I received a letter from Peggy and we conversed and she introduced me to several Winstead cousins. This is how I found out about our Winstead Family, which I will pick up in a later chapter. The part about Mary Winstead coming from Amsterdam, probably meant that is where the Winstead family sailed to America from; because the Winsteds originally came from England, as we will later find out.

All of the Amyx cousins, plus Pearsons and Winstead families have claimed that we are Black Dutch. Now as to the proof of this, we apparently have none, just family tradition; but these families that immigrated from Holland could be the Black Dutch. Henry Wax came from Germany, and he could have been Black Dutch. I just do not know where the Black Dutch came in. Following is an article printed in the Daily Oklahoman, August 14, 1994:

#### EXPRESSION EXPLAINED

By Sharon Burns:

Bob and Verna Fuller, P.O. Box 21097, Oklahoma City, OK. 73156, write seeking information about the term "Black Dutch". The publication, What Did They Mean By That?, a Dictionary of Historical Terms for Genealogists, by Paul Drake defines "Black Dutch" as Sephardic Jews from Spain who married Dutch Protestants to escape an Inquisition during the Middle Ages. "Black" referred to their dark hair and complexions. While attending the National Genealogical Society Conference in the States last June, I visited with Mary Lynn Spijkerman Parker, president of the Dutch Family Heritage Society. Parker provided an article, Were The Black Dutch in America Really Jews?, by Raymond G. Matthews, in the Dutch Family Heritage Society Newsletter, Vol. 3, No. 1, 1989. According to Matthews, one theory speculates the term referred to Spanish soldiers interbreeding with fair-skinned Dutch during the 1500's when the Netherlands were controlled by Spain. Another theory discussed by Matthews agrees with Drake's definition. To avoid persecution, the Jews living in Spain and Portugal moved into countries such



as Belguim, The Netherlands and England. They attempted to blend into society and intermarried with natives of the region. Descendants became Catholic in terms of religion, later becoming members of the Reformed Dutch Church. Later generations immigrated to America and other colonies after 1740. Matthews indicates this definition may not be accurate, stating he has never encountered the term while researching colonial records of New York and New Jersey. Jewish historians and genealogists have also indicated they are unfamiliar with the term. A third theory proposed by Jared Suess of the Family History Library, Salt Lake City, indicates the term may be derived from the Schwarzwald or Black Forest of Germany. The Schwarzwald is in Badem-Wurttemberg and along Switzerland's northern border. The term "Black Dutch" may be a corruption of the word "Deutsch", referring to persons from the Black Forest region. During this period, mercenaries from this region were hired by the Dutch, thus a migration to America, via The Netherlands could have occurred. Other genealogists refer to the term as a regional expression without historical roots. Until family traditions indicating ancestors of "Black Dutch" heritage can be documented by research, these theories are just that, theories.

Now I shall list all of the children and descendants of Samuel and Mary that I have been able to establish:

#### SAMUEL AND MARY WINSTEAD AMYX'S CHILDREN

1. Susan Amyx, born in 1831, married Abraham H. Wilder, born in 1830. He was 2nd Lt, in the 14th Ky. Co. F. They lived in Jackson county during the Civil War - 1860 - Traveled a lot between 1860-70. Children:

- 1850 1. Amanda
- 1852 2. Clifton
- 1854 3. Mary Ann
- 1856 4. Wm. B.
- 1859 5. Sarah L.
- 1862 6. George
- 1864 7. Martha
- 1867 8. Eliza
- 1870 9. Wilson C. (Wilse)

Note: Abraham H. Wilder was the son of Wm. & Dorcus Brewer Wilder.

2. Lucinda Amyx, born 31-10-1833, died 12-11-1901, married Wm. Goodman. He was a Sgt. in Co. E. 14 Ky. Cal. Children:



- A. Sarah Susan Catherine, who married Andrew Jackson Moore. They had six children who are all buried in the Egypt Cemetery.
- B. Dr. Geo. McClelon, who married Virginia Collier. They had four children all buried in Egypt area.
- C. Mansfield, who married Mary Welsh. They had six children all buried in Egypt area.

Note. William Goodman or Jones was born in 1833 in Hawkins County Tennessee and Catharine "Kate" Jones, whose Mother was Elizabeth Pearson, daughter of Christian Pearson. Elizabeth Pearson, born around 1777 married James Jones.

- 3. Isaac Amyx, born 1836, and died 1864, married Mary Susan Johns on 21, December, 1855. She was the daughter of Rial and Martha Slatten Johns. Mary was born in 1840 and died January 20, 1873 in Hancock County. Isaac died in Jackson County of a fever. Children:
  - A. Martha, born in 1857, married Jacob Lamb.
  - B. Lucinda, born in 1859, married Jessie Maxie.
  - C. Eliza, born in 1864, married James Edison.
- 4. Riley Samuel Amyx, born April 10, 1837, died February 25, 1916. Riley married Minerva Pearson, daughter of Henry Pearson, and granddaughter of Christian Pearson, another Revolutionary War Patriot. This is the great grandfather of the author. Minerva Pearson was born September 2, 1837, and died April 12, 1913. Riley was captured at Traveler's Post, Owsley Co. KY, in the Civil War. He had been home to Jackson County eating sweetbreads when the enemy came and started shooting at him. He said, "Sweetbreads started flying, and I started running." Riley Samuel ran the post office in Sneedville, Tennessee for four years. He lived in Jackson County for four years and fought for the Union Army during the Civil War. He and Minerva are buried in the Amyx Cemetery by Friendship Baptist Church in Treadway, Tennessee. Riley Samuel was a private in Company C, 7th Kentucky Infantry and C, Company, 3rd Kentucky Infantry. Children:
  - A. William Harvey, born April 21, 1856, and died September 23, 1936. He married October 31, 1878, to Orlene Trent. Orlene was born September 29, 1859 and died September 16, 1913. She was the daughter of James Madison and Zanie Seal Trent. (Our Line).
  - B. Manilla Francis, born December 9, 1858, married 1. Sampson Odom, and 2. Baxter Neuton Drinnon.
  - C. Henry Jackson, born April 20, 1860 and died 1943, married Laura Collin, born October 27, 1881.

- D. Mary Jane, born March 9, 1862, and died November 23, 1947, married Henderson Lee Smith, September 15, 1878.
  - E. Lawana Amyx, born July 15, 1865, died 1935, married David Seal.
  - F. Martha Dee, born December 23, 1866, married Joab B. Greene.
  - G. Elizabeth, born December 24, 1869, married James H. Cope.
  - H. Cordelia, born November 7, 1871, married Robert T. Greene.
  - I. Susan S., born October 10, 1873, married John Lovin
  - J. Minerva Amyx, born February 23, 1876, married Wm. Lewis Trent
  - K. Riley Samuel, born May 13, 1880, married Sidney Wilder.
  - L. Nancy Eave Amyx, born May 13, 1880, married William Johnson.
  - M. Josie June, born June 15, 1878, married Sampson T. Trent or Greene.
5. James George Amyx, born 1839, died 1860, married Elizabeth Ruth Davis, born 1838, daughter of James and Elizabeth Betts Davis, of Hawkins Co. TN. Children:
- A. Alice, born January 1858, died 1939, married John B. Wilder
  - B. James George, born 1864, died 1931, married Anne Minor.
  - C. Mary, born 1860, married Enoch Wilder.
  - D. America, born October 1869, died 1945, married, 1. Wm. Lawson, 2. John C. Cope, 3. Neis
  - F. Swanson in 1904.

Note: James was a spy for Union Army in the Civil War. He came home to visit and was washing out behind the house when the Rebels came. His Mother, Mary Winstead Amyx, wanted to feed him first, but the Rebels wouldn't allow them to eat. They planned to kill Jim and his friend that night. Wiley Hilton was with Jim, but Wiley got away. Jim was killed by the Rebels in the Cumberland Gap area.

6. Casswell Amyx, born 1842, died August 13, 1863, married Louanna France, born, 1845. She was the daughter of Owan France. Cass was killed during the war. He is buried in Tyner, Kentucky, next to James George Amyx. Cass was a member of Company A, 47th Kentucky Infantry & Co. H. Children:

A. Martha, born 1863, married 1. Albert Casteel; 2. Jonathan Hundley

a. Albert Jr. Casteel      b. Myrtle Hundley      c. Maud Hundley

7. George Amyx, born July 2, died March 2, 1921, married Sarah Charlotte Chestnut, born 1847, and died 1923. She was from Clay County, KY. Children:

A. James Samuel, born 3-13-1866, died 7-9-1866. Buried in Tyner, KY.

B. Wm. Tom, born May 19, 1867, married Lizzie Campbell. William was a doctor and a newspaper editor. He had twin sons that died at birth.

a      &      b (Twins)      c. Georgia, born 1897, married Clayton Earl Rice

C. Mary Savannah, born 1870, died 1896, married Chris C. Halls

D. Robert W. born 1874, died 1905, married Charlene Farmer.

E. John Riley, born 1874, died 1937. Never married. Buried in Treadway, TN

F. Lucy E. born 1877, married Frank Ward

G. Chester A. born 1881, died 1966, married Sallie A. Wilson.

H. Lilly E. born 1887. married Shelby McGorge.

I. Cora E. born 1887, married Ed G. Estridge.

8. Sarah E. Amyx, born April 25, 1846, died July 25, 1911, Married Jacob Miller, born 1846. Son of John and Matilda Miller. This family lived in Egypt, Ky. and are buried in Miller Cemetery and Egypt Cemetery. Children:

A. Martha L. born 1869, married Green Ferguson.

B. Margaret, married Jessie Lewis

C. Fanny, married \_\_\_\_\_ Mays.

D. Alpha, married Harvey Hall.

E. Suda Green, married Bob Welsh.

F. John C. born 1873, died 1937, a Mason.

G. George, married Sue Bulloch.



H. Catherine, married Will Smith, Jr

Note: Jacob Miller was a Civil War soldier, Co. E. 14th KY. Calvary.

9. Samuel Wilse Amyx, born 1849, died 1887, married Francis Short, born 1854, died 1922. Buried in Shelbyville, KY. in the Cropper Cemetery. Children:

A. John

B. General

C. Houston

D. Wm. Edward, born 1876, died 1948, married Minnie Elizabeth Wilburn.

E. Jennie, died at age 19-20.

F. James

10. Wm. Green Amyx, born November 27, 1853, died February 10, 1943, married Sarah L. Smith, born September 9, 1859, died December 25, 1939. This family lived in Jackson County Kentucky, and most of their children lived and died there. This is the family that I went and visited their descendants in 1993. Children:

A. Wm. Riley, born December 1876, died October 1963, married 1. Dora Isaacs, born 1877; 2. Sally Mincher.

B. James Samuel, born December 1878, died 1975, married 1. Nora Jones; 2. Laura Woods.

C. Amanda Susan, born May 1881, died November 1958, married 1. Dr. Robenson, 2. Will Farmer.

a. Ralph b. Roy c. Marshall d. Kermit e. Audrey f. Denver.

D. Josie Cordelia, born July 1885, died April 1961, married 1. Alfred McGeorge, born 1882 ; 2. Columbus Thompson. She had five girls and seven boys.

E. Laura Francis, born December 1887, died 1973, married Marion Holcomb. She was a school teacher.

F. Etta Emmer, born March 1889, died February 1959. She married John Creech.

a. Earl b. Ernest c. Edith



EGYPT BAPTIST MISSIONARY CHURCH  
EGYPT, KY. JACKSON COUNTY  
HOME OF SAMUEL AND MARY WINSTEAD  
AMYX.

BELOW: EDNA JONES AND HER SISTER  
IN LAW, CHARLOTTE FARMER, GRAND  
DAUGHTER OF WM. GREEN AMYX, AND  
GREAT GRANDDAUGHTER OF SAMUEL  
AMYX



EDNA JONES AND GLORIA RICE  
WEST AT EGYPT CEMETERY, EGYPT  
KY. STANDING AT GRAVES OF  
SAMUEL AND MARY WINSTEAD AMYX.

EDNA, CHARLOTTE, AND GLORIA  
AT EDNA'S HOME IN EGYPT, KY



- G. Dora Edna, born August 1895, died June 1982, married Chester Isaac Jones, born 1890, died 1969. This family lived in Jackson Co. Ky. and are buried in Egypt Cemetery. Her children are all living within hollering distance from each other. I went to Charlotte's home and Omar's wife, Edna's home. Omar is deceased.
- a. Omar C. born, 1917, died December 20, 1990; married Edna Budke July 11, 1953. Edna was born 1922. Edna Jones is the cousin by marriage that does all the family history. She is a lovely person to visit and I credit her with most of my information about the family. I want to personally acknowledge her and thank her for everything she has done to pass this valuable history on to all of the Amyx Family. Edna is involved in the Genealogical Socceity and the Tyner Library, recording history, and helping publish the Jackson County Families book, and cataloguing cemeteries. Children:
    - aa. Karen Sue, born March 20, 1954, married John Carroll, Jr., born March 20, 1954. They have two children: Shawn Michael, born December 29, 1975, and Luke Tyler, born August 17, 1985.
    - bb. Nancy Ellen, born December 4, 1960. Married Terry Lynn Milton, born September 4, 1959. They have one daughter, Laura Katlyn, born January 31, 1991.
  - b. Charlotte L. born 1919, married Masel Farmer, died 1972. Charlotte is a retired school teacher. I had the opportunity to be in her home and visit with her. Charlotte lives in Chesterfield, VA., but goes back to KY to her farm occasionally to check it out. She has one daughter:
    - aa. Joyce Ann Carroll, married Kenneth Herbert Carroll. They have two children: Christopher and Andrew.
  - c. Wm. Greene, born February 3, 1924, married Fannie Jo Pierson, born ca. 1934. They have one son:
    - aa. Roger, married Cathy. They have four children: Brandy, Willy, Jessie, and Josh.
- H. Oma Charlotte, born 1883, died 1884.
- I. Franklin, born 1892, died 1892
11. John Connell Amyx, born 1856, died 1944, married Alpha Wilson, born 1861. Buried in Pinegrove Ridge Cemetery, Jackson Co. KY. Children:
- A. Willie, born 1883, died 1954



B. Emory, born 1892, died 1972, married Letha Azbell

C. Ellie, born 1888, died 1975, married Preacher John Rose, born 1887, died 1957.  
Children:

a. Juanita

b. Paul

c. Ted

d. Beverly

e. Herman

f. Margie

g. Ophilla

D. Connell, born 1885, died 1955.

E. Donnie Lee, born 1891, died 1904.

F. Flottie, married Leonard Abrams

G. Lizzie Edna, born 1893, died 1907.

12. Henry Franklin, born August 22, 1859, died October 12, 1938, married September 8, 1877 to Sarah Pearson, born 1856, died 1940; daughter of John and Jemina Beam Pearson. This family lived in Hancock, TN. They are buried in the Amyx Cemetery on highway 70, north to the top of Clinch MT.<sup>6</sup> Children:

A. Chester B., born November 1891, died April 1967, married Cora Cross, born 1886, died 1961. Children:

a. Johnny, married Effie Fields

b. Monita

c. Elizabeth, married Burkett Gibson

d. Bertha, married, 1. Doug Davis, 2. \_\_\_\_\_

---

<sup>6</sup>Hawkins County TN. Cemeteries, Vol. II, pp. 29.

- e. Ruth, married Nick Bloomer
- B. Samuel Wiltz, born November 5, 1879, died April 26, 1957, married Venney Minner, (Cherokee), born 1880, died 1944. Children:
  - a. Wiltz, born 1903, married Sarah Ellen
  - b. Roy, born 1910, married Velva
  - c. Claibourne, married Elsie Short
  - d. John S. born 1906.
  - e. Henry F. born 1900, married Nora Price
  - f. Will
  - g. Rachel, died 1967, married \_\_\_\_\_.
  - h. Hallie, married Charles
  - i. Hazel
- C. Amanda Amyx, born August 11, 1886, died February 4, 1905.
- D. Sudie D. Amyx, born 1895
- E. Mary Alice, born April 1880, died June 2, 1946, never married.
- F. George L. born 1883, died 1979, married Laura Davis.
- G. Stokley B. born 1889, died 1975, married Stella Klepper.
- H. John H. born 1881, died 1956, married Laura Price.
- I. Sidney, born 1895, died 1976, married Ed Presley.

This concludes Samuel and Mary Winstead Pace Amyx's children. I have two deeds for Samuel Amyx; one between him and Frances Clark, and one with James Hocker, Sheriff. The copies are not very easy to read so I did not attempt to put them in this book. The letter I shared about our Grandfather Samuel in Kentucky tells a lot about him; which is my main objective in this book.

## CHAPTER SIX

### FIFTH GENERATION

Riley Samuel{5}Samuel {4}Isaac {3}Samuel {2} Matthew {1}, was born in Hawkins County Tennessee, April 10, 1837, and died February 25, 1916. He married Minerva Pearson in Lee Valley, TN. in December of 1854. Esquire John Mitchell performed the ceremony.<sup>7</sup> Minerva Pearson, daughter of Henry and Mary Cole Pearson, was born September 2, 1837, and died April 12, 1913. They are buried in the Amyx Cemetery by the Friendship Baptist Church in Sneedville, TN, Hancock County.<sup>8</sup>

Riley Samuel was the fourth child of Samuel and Mary Winstead Amyx. Riley fought in the Union Army during the Civil War. He served in the 7th Regiment of Kentucky. He volunteered August 14, 1861. He was captured at Travelers Rest, Owsley County, KY. Riley had gone home to visit his family and was sitting at the dinner table eating sweetbreads, when the enemy came and started shooting. He said, "Sweetbreads started flying and I started running." He later escaped from the Rebels. It seems I recall being told or reading in some material Riley was a spy, but I can't verify it. Riley's family had left Tennessee and moved to Kentucky, to avoid persecution. Those who were sympathizers with the North and against slavery were not to popular in Hawkins and Hancock County. After the war Riley moved his family back to Hancock County. The Pearson family remained in TN., so I do not know whether this was to appease his wife, Minerva or not.

Riley ran the post office for four years in Sneedville, but spent most of his life on his farm there in Treadway, TN. The Friendship Baptist Church is built on what use to be Riley and Minerva's land. The old homestead was torn down by a mining company that owned the land at one time. My sister, Jolene and her husband, Billy Wayne, made a trip back to Tennessee with Roy and me in 1991. It was such a delight to be able to go back to where our ancestors lived and visit the cemeteries and relatives there in that area. Roy and I made another trip to Sneedville in 1993, and that is when I really did my research on most of the families and visited Trent, Brewer, and Amyx cousins.

The 1850 Hawkins County TN. census gives Riley's age as 13. He had eleven brothers and sisters. Riley and Minerva had thirteen children. They were:

1. William Harvey, born April 21, 1856, and died September 23, 1936, He married Orlene Trent born September 29, 1859, and died September 16, 1913. She was the daughter of James Madison and Zana Seal Trent. This is the family the author descended from. I will list their children in the next chapter.
2. Manilla (Nila) Francis, born September 12, 1858, and died 1923. She married 1. Sampson Odom, Jr. born 1856 and died 1879.

---

<sup>7</sup>Riley Samuel Amyx's Pension Application.

<sup>8</sup>Hawkins County TN. Cemeteries, Vol. II, pp. 28.



RILEY SAMUEL AND MANERVA PEARSON AMYX

BELOW: A FAMILY REUNION IN TREADWAY,  
TN. CA. 1908. FROM LEFT TO  
RIGHT STANDING: MARY JANE  
AMYX SMITH, RILEY JR. AMYX,  
FRANK AMYX, SIDNEY AMYX,  
LAUANA AMYX SEAL, DAVID SEAL,  
NEUTON DRINNON, AUNT SIS,  
MANILLA FRANCIS AMYX, JOHN  
LOVIN, SUSAN AMYX LOVIN,  
LIZZIE AMYX COPE, WM. HARVEY  
AMYX, FRANKIE MINERVA AMYX  
TRENT, ORLENE TRENT AMYX.

NEXT ROW:

CORDELIA AMYX GREENE, ROBERT  
LEE SMITH, FLORENCE GREENE,  
RILEY, SR. AND MANERVA AMYX,  
JACK AMYX, LAURA COLLIN AMYX.

SEATED:

FRED AMYX, WAYLAND AMYX, BEDFORD  
TRENT, DAISEY GREENE, JOHNNY AMYX,  
HORACE AMYX, HARVEY JOHNSON, FRANK  
(TIDE) AMYX, LONA BREWER, BOBBY  
GREENE, OLLIE SEAL, DELLA DRINNON,  
AND EVA AMYX.



FAMILY REUNION AT THE RILEY SAMUEL AND MANERVA  
PEARSON AMYX HOME PLACE IN TREADWAY, TENNESSEE





FRIENDSHIP BAPTIST CHURCH, TREADWAY, TN.  
ON RILEY SAMUEL AMYX'S OLD HOME PLACE.  
HANCOCK COUNTY, TN. ROY AND GLORIA'S  
VAN TO THE SIDE OF THE CHURCH. JOLENE,  
BILLY WAYNE, ROY AND I TOOK THIS TRIP  
IN 1990.



AT RIGHT: HEADSTONES OF RILEY SAMUEL AND MANERVA PEARSON AMYX.

BOTTOM: JOLENE AND GLORIA AT GREAT GRANDMOTHER'S GRAVESITE.

AMYX CEMETERY BY FRIENDSHIP BAPTIST CHURCH, TREADWAY, TN.





- A. Sarah Alice Odom, born November 30, 1876, died November 27, 1955.  
Sarah married Greenberry Green, born August 28, 1866, and died September 15, 1931.

Manilla then married 2. Baxter Newton Drinnon, born 1862, died 1935. They had thirteen children:

- A. Elizabeth "Betty", born 1881, died 1965, married Joe Greene, son of Jackson Greene.
  - B. Tyler Carlile, born 1893, died 1976, married 1. Minnie Wilder, born 1896, died 1945; 2. Loudenia M. Davis.
  - C. William Sherman, born 1886, married 1. Nancy Vila Brewer, born 1885, died 1910; 2. Ida Reece.
  - D. Harvey Drinnon, born 1891, married Laura Seals.
  - E. Eva, born 1895, married Abige Trent.
  - F. Mollie, born 1889, married Tillman Mills, son of Riley.
  - G. Della, born 1900, died 1963, married App Price, son of James D. Price.
  - H. Clay, born 1886, died 1969, married Sally Drinnon, daughter of Thomas.
  - I. Sam, born 1888, died 1950, married Lizzie Cantwell, daughter of Tom.
  - J. Pearl, born 1897, died 1968, married Thomas Lathem, son of Oscar.
  - K. "Male", born 1900, died 1900, twin of Della.
  - L. Minerva, died at age 4.
  - M. "Male", died at birth.
3. Henry Jack, born April 20, 1860, died 1943. Married October 27, 1881 to Laura Collins, born 1862, and died 1924. Children:
- A. Jesse Emmert, born 1884, married Rufus Pierson (Pearson) son of Arthur McClellan Pearson. I happened to come in contact with a cousin, Geraldine Adair, from Beaufort, NC. She is a descendant from Henry Jack Amyx, brother of William Harvey. I would like to include Jesse Emmert's children. Arthur McClellan is the son of Christopher Columbus Pearson, brother of Henry Pearson, father of Minerva Pearson, our grandmother. We are double kin to these people.



- aa. Fane Wright Pearson, married Viola Orr
  - 1. Geraldine Pearson Adair, married -----Adair
    - 1a. Geoffery Adair
- bb. Laura Edith Pearson, married James Loggans
- cc. Eula Nancy Pearson, married Oscar Martin Privette
- dd. Ruth Imogene Pearson, married Clarence P. Wilson
- ee. Lola Wave Pearson
  - ff. Arthur Ray Pearson, married Bessie Hicks
- gg. Jack Kyle Pearson, married Sara Bass
- hh. Hugh Cannon Pearson, married Geneva Huff
  - ii. Alma Elizabeth Pearson, married Myles Ray Calhoun
- jj. Thomas Wayland Pearson, married Bea Jones
- kk. Dorothy Irene Pearson, married Ernest Lloyd
  - ll. Charles Warren Pearson, married Florence Mitchell

B. Walter Green, born 1886, married Bobbie Ova Sutton.

C. John A., born 1889, died 1940, married Lillie \_\_\_\_\_.

D. Robert Kyle, born 1892

E. Myrtle M., born 1893, died 1977, married Hugh Fletcher.

F. Wm. Wright, born 1896, died 1915.

G. Lee Bana (Girl), born 1897, married Hale S. Bryant

H. Irene, born 1899, married Wm. J. Campbell.

I. Waylan, born 1905, died 1988, married Mary Jane Smith

4. Mary Jane, born September 3, 1869, in Jackson Co. KY., died 1947. Married August 1878 to Henderson Lee Smith, son of Dorcus Smith. They are buried in Amyx Cemetery in Treadway, TN.

A. James Lafayette, born 1879.

B. Wm. Harvey, born 1882, married Berdie \_\_\_\_\_.

C. Martha Elizabeth, born 1884, married \_\_\_\_\_ Helton.

D. Maud Dorcus, born 1887, married Will Barnard.

E. Florence Minerva, born 1890, died 1978. Married Cradus L. Wilder, born 1884, died 1945.

F. Laura Jane, born 1893, married Thomas Wilder.

G. Robert Lee, born 1903, married Clara Merriman

5. Louanna (Lawanna), born July 18, 1865 in Jackson Co. KY. Died 1935, married David Seal, born 1863, died 1931. They moved and lived in Delki, OK. Children:

A. Riley Seal, born 1883, married Grace Houx

B. Pleasant, born 1884, died 1894; killed by a horse.

C. Wint, born 1885, married Roxy Killam.

D. Birbridge, born 1886, married Ollie D. Vaughn.

E. Minnie, born 1888, married Charlie Houx.

F. Eugene, born 1891, married Bertha Flannery.

G. Clyde, born 1893, married Birdie Baker.

H. David, born 1900, married Zinna Chisum.

I. W. Paschal, born 1894, married Eula Cromwell.

J. Lock, born 1896, married Eva Crain.

K. Quincey Ova, born 1902, married Anne Monk.

L. Iva, born 1902, married Sidney Stotts.

M. Zelma, born 1904, married Wm. Chisum.

N. Emma, born 1906, married Ira Robison.

O. Floy, born 1907, married Leonard Chisum.

P. Ollie, born 1909, married O.J. Sisco.

6. Martha Amyx, born December 23, 1866, died 1949 in Los Angeles, CA. She married Joab B. Greene, born 1867, died 1946; son of John Greene. Children:

A. Henry Greene, born 1886, married Jennie Strain.

B. Laura Greene, born 1889, married Jim Amis.



- C. Manerva Greene, born 1893, married 1. Sam Ruggles; 2. J. Stratten.
  - D. William Greene, born 1896, married Beulah Threadgill.
  - E. Robert Greene, born 1891, married Caroline Cowell.
7. Elizabeth Amyx, born December 24, 1869, married James H. Cope, born 1868. Children:
- A. Nora F, born 1891.
  - B. Orlena L., born 1893.
  - C. Mertie E., born 1896.
  - D. Robert Cope, born 1898.
8. Cordelia Amyx, born September 11, 1871, died 1952, married Robert T. Greene, born September 14, 1872, died October 10, 1947. Son of David and Ruth Trent Greene. Children:
- A. Thomas, born 1891, died 1954, never married.
  - B. Hattie, born 1892, married Luke Drimmon.
  - C. Bobbie, born 1894, died 1977, married Keaner Wilder.
  - D. Daisy, born 1901, married Chris Wilder.
  - E. Milum, married Ethel Vaughn.
  - F. Lester, born 1907, married Lyda Skelton.
  - G. Woodrow, born 1912, died 1966, married Sally Horner.
  - H. Florence, born 1894, died 1919; never married.
  - I. Dana, born 1905; never married.
9. Susan Amyx, born October 10, 1873, died January 1, 1911, married John Lovin, born 1878. Children:
- A. Bertha, born 1899.
  - B. Henry, born 1902.

10. Minerva Amyx, born February 23, 1876, died 1953, married Wm. Lewis Trent, born 1876, died 1961 in Rose Hill, Lee County VA. All of their children were born at Sneedville, TN. Sometime after their youngest child was born they moved to Lee County VA. Children:
  - A. Anna Mae, born 1897, died 1970, married 1. John Fugate, 2. Lee Miracle.
  - B. Mary Jane, born 1899, died 1940, married 1. Wint Alder, 2. Hugh Ingle.
  - C. Martha F. born 1903, died 1921, married Morgan Ingle.
  - D. William Bedford, born 1906, died 1975, married 1. Pearl Mainess, 2. Alkie Gibbons; 3. Odie Ingle, and 4. Mary Kate McMurray.
  - E. Elizabeth Nola, born 1906, died 1988, married Oscar Hensley, son of Sherman.
  - F. James Riley, born 1910, died 1969, married 1. Goldie Hobbs, 2. Lucy Ray.
  - G. Carrie Minerva, born 1908, died 1983, married Morgan Hensley, son of Burt.
  - H. Minnie Carolina, born 1913, died 1984, married Finley Hensley, son of Burt.
  - I. Blanche Henrietta, born 1916, married 1. Henry Lee Cole, 2. Dannie Barb, 3. Walter Hawk. This is Earl Cole's Mother. She is a double first cousin to Mother.
  - J. Beatrice Marie, 1920, married 1. Gib Hensley, 2. Charles Seabolt.
  - K. John Trent, died at 10 months.
  - L. Pearl, died at young age.
11. Riley Samuel, Jr., born May 13, 1880, died February 3, 1919 in France. He was PFC., Co. L. 117th Inf. W.W.I. He married Sidney Wilder, daughter of John B. and Mary Alcy Amyx Wilder. Children:
  - A. John Amyx, born 1901.
  - B. Horace Amyx, born 1903.
  - C. Evelyn Amyx, born 1905, married B.D. Merriman.
  - D. Cecil Amyx, born 1907.
12. Josie June, born June 15, 1878, died July 21, 1908. Married Sampson Trent Greene, born May 5, 1878, died June 13, 1949; son of Nervesta Greene and Dan Trent. Sampson was really a Trent but took the Greene name. Children:



- A. Riley Trent Greene, born 1897, married Mable Clifton.
- B. Jack Trent Greene, married Elsie Marion.
- C. Mae Trent Greene, born 1903, married Bill Young.
- D. Glennie Greene, born 1907, died young.
- E. Charlie, born 1906.

13. Eva Amyx, born May 13, 1880, died 1902, married William Johnson. Children:

- A. Leona Johnson, born 1898, died 1977, married Mack Brewer, born 1888, died 1965. My Mother, Myrtle Amyx Rice went to TN. in the 1960's, and visited with Leona and Mack Brewer. I visited with Leona's daughter Evelyn Brewer Wolfe, over the phone several times. She remembered Mother coming to visit her Mother and her. She said that Mother was so much fun.
  - a. Evelyn Brewer Wolfe, married Tony Wolfe.
    - aa. Wanda Wolfe
  - b. Wayne Brewer, married Blanche Drinnon.
  - c. Ina Brewer, married Horace Greene.
  - d. Eugene Brewer
  - e. Margaret Brewer, married Leonard Johnson.
  - f. Carroll Brewer, married Bonnie Williams.
  - g. Juanita Brewer, married Johnny Ware.
  - h. Maxine Brewer, married Paul Tripuka.

I have a Jackson County KY. deed for Riley Samuel Amyx, but it is not very legible, so I will not include it in his history. Minerva Pearson Amyx's family will be picked up in the Pearson chapter.

My Mother, Myrtle Amyx Rice, told this story to me and my preacher when Mother was in the hospital just previous to her death. We were talking about being close to God and believing in His Power.

"Great Grandma Minerva Pearson was a very religious woman. Her family were Quakers that came over to Pennsylvania with William Penn and his followers. Anyway, one day Grandma was out working in her garden in Treadway, TN. She was talking to the Lord and praising Him when suddenly--the "power" hit her and she started dancing and praising God. When she settled down and looked all around, she had completely trampled all of her cabbage patch down."



## CHAPTER SEVEN

### GENERATION SIX

William Harvey{6}Riley Samuel{5}Samuel{4}Isaac{3}Samuel{2}Matthew{1} was born April 21, 1856, in Hawkins County, Tennessee, and died September 23, 1936 in Sanger, Texas, Denton County. He married Orlena (Orlene)Trent, born September 29, 1859, and died Septemaber 16, 1913. They were married October 31, 1878 in Hancock County Tennessee. William Harvey was a Baptist, Mason, Farmer, and a well respected citizen.

William Harvey was the first of thirteen children born to Riley Samuel and Minerva Pearson Amyx. Orlene Trent was the daughter of James Madison Trent and Zana Seal Trent. They had nine children while living in Hancock County, TN. They moved to Denton County, TX. in 1896, and settled on the Lock Forrester Ranch West of Bolivar. They lived there for nine years and that is where the remaining four children were born. Jack and Fannie died during this time.

William Harvey moved his family to the Jim Holt place for six years. He purchased a farm Northeast of Sanger in 1911. In 1912 their old farm house burned to the ground, but all escaped unharmed. William Harvey built a fine new home and in 1913, Orlene passed away. Her death certificate gives the principal cause of death as heart failure. In 1936 William Harvey passed away. His death certificate gives reason: Myocarditis - chronic; with Nephritis and high blood pressure. Doctor Johnnie Rice was attending physician, and Wilbur Forester of Sanger was the undertaker. William and Orlene are buried at the Bolivar Cemetery in Bolivar, Texas, Denton County.

Following is a letter William Harvey wrote to his daughter, my mother, Myrtle Marie Amyx Rice:

Sanger, Texas  
Monday the 12, 1931

Mrs W.C. Rice:

Dear Daughter:

In answer to your letter, Boss and I went to Slidell and saw the man from McKing. Evan Rice was not there. We looked over the place, it is very good place. Had some small rocks on it in places. All in cultivation, lies well. Joins John Christian's farm on the northwest, and the old Ball \_\_\_\_\_ on the northeast. It has a few spots of Johnson grass on it. Good fence around it, 'bout two miles from Slidell.

Myrtle, if you and Bill want to trade for the place you come and look at it. You can come some night and go back the next day. You come to Slidell and go to the old Ball \_\_\_\_\_ place. Allen Millegan lives on it and he can show it to you. I am well as common. All well, Zanie is washing, hasn't time to write.

W H Amyx



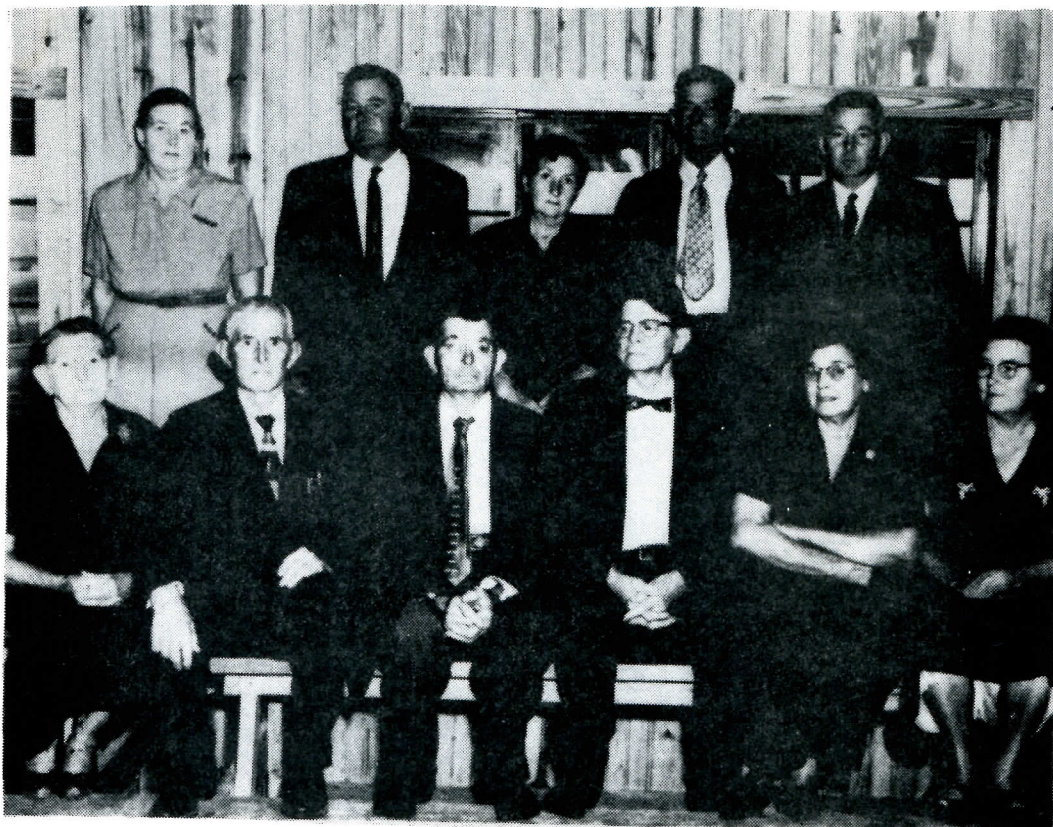
WILLIAM HARVEY AND ORLENE TRENT AMYX



WILLIAM HARVEY AND ORLENE TRENT AMYX WITH THE FIRST NINE CHILDREN IN TENNESSEE, BEFORE GOING TO SANGER, TEXAS.



CHILDREN OF WILLIAM HARVEY AND ORLENE TRENT AMYX  
AT FAMILY REUNION AT CAMP COPASS, TX. FIRST RE-  
UNION IN TWENTY ONE YEARS. RANGE IN AGE IS 52 to  
77. STANDING FROM LEFT TO RIGHT: ZANNIE, HENRY,  
MYRTLE, FRED, TIDE, MATTIE, SAM, BILL, COY, HATTIE,  
AND CARRIE.



FRANK (TIDE) AMYX AND MYRTLE AMYX RICE AT FAMILY  
REUNION IN 1982, THE FALL BEFORE MYRTLE DIED.





William Harvey had a will filed at the Denton County Courthouse. Orlene did not have a will. I would like to share this will with you. It is as follows:

The State of Texas, County of Denton. Know all men by these presents, that I W.H. Amyx, of Sanger, Denton County, State of Texas, being in sound and disposing mind and memory, and in reasonably good health, but getting up in years, and realizing full well that all men must sooner or later die, and desiring while yet living, to direct the disposition of whatever property I may die possessed of, hereby make, publish, and declare the following instrument as my LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT, hereby revoking all former wills heretofore made by me.

First, it is my desire that all the honest debts I may owe at my death, including the expense of my last sickness, and burial in a modest Christian way, and a suitable modest monument, in accord with my estate and station in life, erected at my grave.

Second, it is my desire, that the residue of my estate after the payment of my said debts be disposed of as follows, to wit: divided into ELEVEN equal shares or portions, one of said shares or portions to be delivered to each of my said ELEVEN children, or to their descendants, should any of my said children die before I do, and should any one of my said ELEVEN children die intestate and leave no surviving child or children, then in such event it is my desire that such share of said deceased child, revert back and be divided equally among my surviving children, or their descendants.

Second, in the event that at my death any of my children are indebted to me, then in such event it is my desire that the amount of such indebtedness owing to me by such child, be deducted from his or her share of my said estate.

Third, in the event that any of my children are indebted to me at my death, either by note or just an account not evidenced by writing, and in either event such indebtedness shall not be barred by any statute or limitation, as such indebtedness is an advancement made by me to such child or children to be charged against his or her share of my said estate.

Fourth, I hereby nominate my son J.S. Amyx, if living at my death, as my sole executor of this last Will and Testament, and reposing full faith and confidence in the ability and integrity of my said son J.S. Amyx, that he will faithfully carry out this trust, I hereby relieve him of giving any bond or security to any court or person for the faithful performance of this trust.

Fifth, It is not my intention in this will to dispose of the undivided One half interest in the community estate belonging to my deceased wife, Orlene Amyx, but to dispose of my one half interest in said community estate and my separate estate.

Sixth, it is my desire that no other or further action in regard to my said estate, be had or taken in the probate court or any other court, save and except to file this will and probate the same, and file the usual Statutory inventory, and list of property and claims. In Witness whereof, I have hereunto subscribed my name at Sanger, Texas, and published and declared to above and foregoing as my last Will and Testament,

This the 17th day of December, A.D., 1923.

W. H. Amyx

On this the 17th day of December, A.D. 1923, at Sanger, Texas, W.H. Amyx, in our presence, signed the above and foregoing writing, and published and declared the same as his last Will and Testament, and we at his request, and in his presence, and in the presence of each other, have hereto written our names as subscribing witnesses.



A. L. Gentle

T. L. Bumanghs?

There was in County Court of Denton No. 1805, a probate estimate of Mrs. Orlena Amyx, Deceased. Wm. H. Amyx, survivor. June 6, 1916: Decree appointing appraisers and for application for Community Administration. A decree approving inventory and bond. Receipts of various heirs, dated November 2, 1933.

Probate index docket for Estate of W. H. Amyx, deceased No. 3347, gives J. S. Amyx as executor. September 30, 1936 an application for probate of will and citation on application for probate of Will. In October a waiver of commission by executor and proof of last will of W. H. Amyx. An order admitting will to probate and appointed appraisers of estate. Oath of executor, inventory, appraisal and list of claims. There was an order approving inventory, appraisal and list of claims. In May of 1937, an order requiring executor to give bond.

#### WILLIAM HARVEY AND ORLENE AMYX FAMILY TREE

Without a doubt, we are all indebted to James Everett and Ida May Amyx; and W. H. Amyx and his wife, Joye. Many years ago James Everett and Ida Mae presented a window shade with a big tree with lots of branches and roots on it. James Everett designed the tree and Ida May started the time consuming and very rewarding task of posting all of William Harvey and Orlene's children, grandchildren, and great grandchildren, etc.

A few years ago, W. H. and Joye were inspired to transfer this information to their computer. This is greatly appreciated by me, the author, as without it, I would not be able to include this information in my book. My thanks goes to them for contributing this valuable material to all who are interested. Frank B. (Tide) Amyx is given credit to buying the window shade. Not all of the descendants are included in this genealogy; but if anyone would like to have a complete list, W. H. and Joye probably would accomodate you.

First I must share this little story Mother told me about Grandpa Amyx:

"Daddy was a young man and had come under conviction he was a sinner. He went out in the woods and got down on his knees and was really calling out loud to the Lord. He heard some hunters walking close by and jumped up, brushed off his clothes and acted nonchalant. As soon as they passed on, he got back down and prayed his salvation through."

William Harvey and Orlene Trent Amyx had thirteen children. They are as follows:

1. Mattie Alice Amyx, born January 13, 1880 in Sneedville, Hancock County, Tennessee. She died September 12, 1959. She is buried in Bolivar Cemetery, Bolivar, Denton Co. TX. She married James Marvin Anthony on February 13, 1902. I called Owran and asked him to tell me a little about Aunt Mattie. He told me about when Aunt Mattie was on her death

bed. Aunt Mattie had been in a coma all one day. Owran went and put his suit in the cleaners because they knew Aunt Mattie wouldn't live very long and he would need the suit for the funeral. He was working at the mill at the time. Owran went to the hospital. Aunt Mattie came out of the coma and all the children were gathered at the hospital. She would hold different ones hands all day. She told them she had had the sweetest experience, and had something to tell or say to each of her children. She asked the pastor if it was dark the night before. He said, yes that it was dark. She told him, "Where I was it wasn't." Finally she told the girls to turn loose of her hands. The Lord would hold her hands from here on. Children:

- A. Georgia Mattie Anthony, born Delcember 27, 1902, died March 30, 1905. Buried in the Bolivar Cemetery.
- B. Carlos Wesley Anthony, born April 24, 1904 in Sanger, TX. Died February 23, 1987. Buried in Roselawn Cemetery, Denton, TX. Married Fay Marie Brier on May 9, 1930 in Marietta, Love Co. OK. She was born in Krum, Denton County, TX. Children:
  - aa. James Byron Anthony, born 12/18/1930, married 6/28/1952, Mary Pauline Roberts
    - 1. James Leslie Anthony, born 8/28/1955, married 8/12/1978, Marilyn B. Horton
    - 2. Karen Diane Anthony, born 2/1/1957, married 5/17/1981, William Briceno.
  - bb. Nita Carlene Anthony, born 4/29/1933, married 1/24/1953, Robert Earl Cowley.
    - 1. David Earl Cowley, born 12/4/1953, married 9/6/1975, Brenda Lunn.
    - 2. Rebecca Gayle Cowley, born 2/21/1956, married 7/8/1978, Terry Turner.
    - 3. Mark Wesley Cowley, born 12/19/1959, married 1/20/1987, Petra Brucksteig.
- C. James Harvey Anthony, born February 4, 1907 in Roosevelt County, NM. Married Willie J. Elder on July 21, 1929 in Marietta, Love County, OK. Born October 19, 1912 in Moody, TX. Children:
  - aa. William Bruce Anthony, born 12/2/1931, married 3/14/1954, Arletta Sue Millsap.
    - 1. William Bruce Annthony, Jr., born 11/14/1955, married Janice Kiger.
    - 2. Shanda Sue Anthony, born 12/1/1956, married Mike O'Neal.
    - 3. James Alan Anthony, born 6/5/1959, married Rose Ann McLaughlin.
    - 4. David Eric Anthony, born 8/8/1968, married Kelly Adams
    - 5. Dana Renee' Anthony, born 2/16/1970, married Dale Grandmason.
- D. Carnie Mae Anthony, born September 19, 1905, died July 17, 1993. Married Charlie Lawson Yeatts on September 2, 1923. Children:



aa. Fannie Marie Yeatts, born 7/14/1924, md. 7/1/1944, Raymond ~~OdeH~~ Williams. OdeH

- 1. Sheila Marie Williams, born 12/20/1946, md. 6/18/1965, Eddie Yancey.
- 2. Russell Raymond Williams, born 2/11/1949, md. 6/27/1969, Elizabeth "Charlene" Spurgeon.
- 3. Mark Wesley Williams, born 6/24/1954, md. 6/18/1976, Yvonne "Elaine" Whitmore.
- 4. Dan Lawson Williams, born 11/28/1956, md. 7/30/1976, Paula Schermerhorn.
- 5. Sharla Kay Williams, born 5/20/1965, md. 2/7/1987, ~~Ronnie~~ Robert Pipes. Ronny

bb. Joe ~~Bernie~~ Yeatts, born 2/24/1926, md. Edgar F. Gossett.

- 1. Marlan D. Gossett, born 5/14/1946.
- 2. Jo Annette Gossett, born 11/18/1948.
- 3. Reginna F. Gossett, born 7/1/1950.
- 4. Steven R. Gossett, born 10/5/1951.

Maggie Faye Yeatts  
cc. ~~Faye~~ Yeatts, born 4/17/1928, married Jimmy McCormack.

- 1. Michal McCormack, born 12/28/1948.
- 2. Patsy McCormack, married Eddie Sallee, on 11/1970.
- 3. James McCormack
- 4. Tim McCormack, born 12/31/1956.

Second Marriage: Faye Yeatts McCormack to Elbert Hughes.

dd. Charlene Yeatts, born 6/27/1931, md. 7/29/1951, Thomas Richards.

- 1. Nathan Earl Richards, born 5/30/1953, md. 1. Amanda Frank, 2. Christina
- 2. Paula Sue Richards, born 10/6/1959, md. 8/6/1982, Charles M. Johnston.

ee. Berta Mae Yeatts, born 9/5/1933, md. 8/2/1952, Brent Steve Farr.

- 1. Berta Ruth Farr, born 6/9/1954, md. 5/17/1980, Steven Joseph Ashlock
- 2. James Brent Farr, born 11/8/1957, md. 5/28/1983, Nanette Elaine Gould
- 3. Brenda Jo Farr, born 3/7/1959, md. 4/21/1979, Mark Allen Westbrook
- 4. Linda Joy Farr, born 4/18/1962, md. 5/26/1984, Jay Sandon Cooper.

Bertie

ff. Joyce Yeatts, married Ray Lynch.

- 1. Donna Lynch
- 2. Janna Lynch
- 3. Merwyn Lynch
- 4. Serah Lynch

gg. C. L. Yeatts, married Nancy Jenkins.

- 1. Sherry Yeatts, born 7/4/1959, md. 8/27/1977, Randy Barber
- 2. Randy Yeatts
- 3. Cindy Yeatts

E. Mable Orlene Anthony, born November 9, 1908, died May 1, 1974. Married Walter Kenas on August 26, 1926. Born April 5, 1905, died August 1980.  
Children:

- aa. Walter Ray Kenas, born 4/17/1928, md. 9/25/1945, Laura Watkins
  - 1. Linda A. Kenas, born 6/20/1951, md. 6/20/1966, Gary W. Barton.
  - 2. Stanley Ray Kenas, born 1/8/1954.
  - 3. Sharon Rose Kenas, born 12/30/1955.

- bb. Lee Roy Kenas, born 7/16/1929, md. 10/15/1949, Martha Sullivan.
  - 1. Janet Lee Kenas, born 8/16/1951, md. 2/7/1970, Bart Starr
  - 2. Marilyn Kenas, born 7/16/1955.

- cc. Billy Royce Kenas, born 2/7/1935, md. Joyce Sockwell
  - 1. Jacqueline Kenas, born 7/5/1956.
  - 2. Kathy Kenas, born 3/5/1961.
  - 3. William Royce Kenas, born 6/16/1968.

F. Fannie Pauline Anthony, born July 15, 1911, in Slidell Wise Co, TX. Married Erwin W. Borth on December 22, 1931. Children:

- aa. William Charles Borth, born 10/11/1932, md. 5/31/1957, Mildred Janette Hale.
- bb. Anthony Eldon Borth, born 9/16/1941, md. 6/23/1961, Linda Dean Purifoy.
  - 1. Tony Ray Borth, born 5/12/1961, md. 9/17/1990, Rhonda
  - 2. Randall Duane Borth, born 3/10/1965, md. 1/16/1989, Mary
  - 3. Troy Dean Borth, born 9/6/1968, md. 6/12/1991, Reba Spires
  - 4. Rodney Allen Borth, born 5/9/1972.

Second marriage of Fannie Anthony Borth to Harvey Griffin Furr.

G. William Curtis Anthony, born August 16, 1913, died November 25, 1935. Buried Boliver Cemetery, Denton County, TX.

H. Lowran Anthony (Twin), Born November 29, 1915, died November 25, 1920.

I. Owran Anthony (Twin), born November 29, 1915. Married Goldia A. Cundiff on March 18, 1939. Born July 6, 1915. Children:

- aa. Luther Lowran Anthony, born 11/7/1940, md. 1/18/1964, Inez Johnston.
  - 1. Abe Anthony, born 8/28/1964.

- bb. Emily Jane Anthony, born 8/29/1944, md. 12/22/1962, Don A. Yeatts.
  - 1. Janet Lynn Yeatts, born 1/11/1965, md. 4/22/1989, Kevin Ackerman
  - 2. Ronnie Allen Yeatts, born 10/8/1969.

- cc. Marilyn Joy Anthony, born 4/18/1950, md. 12/22/1972, James Riley Purnell.
  - 1. Richard Anthony Purnell, born 4/25/1975.
  - 2. Timothy Galen Purnell, born 12/18, 1980.

Father = Aaron Yeatts  
 Brother of  
 Charlie Yeatts  
 who married  
 Carmel Mae Anthony



2. James Samuel (Sam) Amyx, born May 6, 1881 in Sneedville, Hancock County, Tennessee, died May 12, 1974. Buried Cloverdale Cemetery, Boise, Ada County Idaho. Married Annie Mae Stephens on July 16, 1905, west of Sanger, Mellissa, TX. Children:
    - A. Roy Luther Amyx, born October 13, 1906 in Bolivar, Denton County, TX. Died 1994. Married Tennel Alfreda Wright on October 29, 1929 in Marietta, Love County OK. Born Febraury 17, 1911 in Fort Worth, TX. Children:
      - aa. Freddie Jane Amyx, born 11/19/1931, md. 1950, 1 Billy O'Rear, 2 Freddy Vaughn
        1. Lisa O'Rear, born 8/31/1958, married #1 Michael Ball, #2 Richard Camarata
      - bb. Sarah Ann Amyx, born 8/4/1937, md. 6/16/1956, Donald W. Sparkman.
        1. Donnie W. Sparkman, born 4/2/1960.
        2. Kevin Roy Sparkman, born 7/16/1961, md. 8/20/1985, Marion Grace Gossett
    - B. John William (Bill) Amyx, born August 28, 1908 in Bolivar, TX. Died January 12, 1989. Buried Cloverdale Cemetery, Boise, ID. Married Jonnie Grace Milkes on January 22, 1929 in Elk City, OK. Born May 2, 1910. Children:
      - aa. John William Amyx, Jr., born 8/28/1908, md. 10/18/1949, Dorothy Dale Lloyd.
        1. Holly Lee Amyx, born, 6/19/1952, married #1 Michel Banks, #2 Thomas Gaynor.
        2. Angela Ann Amyx, born 12/16/1953, married Howard McFarland
- Second marriage of John Wm. Amyx, Jr., to Bryn Davis on January 22, 1978.
- bb. Harold Dean Amyx, born 8/31/1933, md. 9/3/1950, Phillis Mae Roark.
    1. Bobbie Sue Amyx, born 7/27/1952, married Jack Eugene Owsley
    2. Terry Lynn Amyx, born 2/21/1956, married Patrick Kevin Reilly
  - cc. Bertha May Amyx, born 7/6/1939, md. 6/29/1958, Ted Rasor.
    1. Timothy Victor Rasor, born 2/11/1959, md. 5/4/1983, Lisa Bozza
    2. Micheal John Rasor, born 10/1/1960, md. 10/15/1988, Shannon Marie Shiflet
    3. Jeffery Todd Rasor, born 3/15/1962, md. 1/21/1984, Carol Ann Gormly
- C. Ruby Jane Amyx, born August 11, 1913 in Sanger, TX., died February 5, 1990. Married Ernest Edward Trietsch on December 11, 1932 in Ponder TX. Children:
    - aa. Elizabeth Ann Trietsch, born 9/19/1936, died 9/19/1936.
    - bb. Ellis Herman Trietsch, born 2/11/1942, died 2/12/1942.
    - cc. Dorothy Jane Trietsch, born 9/10/1944, md. 6/17/1968, Homer Samuel Schertz

1. Matthew Samuel Schertz, born 11/8/1973
  2. Jeffery Dale Schertz, born 7/31/1976.
- dd. Mary Ernestine Trietsch, born 1/19/1947, md. 3/28/1970, Clinton Edmundson, Jr.
- ee. Lewis Edward Trietsch, born 6/22/1952, md. 7/22/1973, Rebecca Dianne Gresham.
1. Jason Edward Trietsch, born 1/16/1978.
  2. Jeremy Trietsch, born 1/12/1983.
- D. James Madison (Red) Amyx, born January 25, 1917 in Decatur TX. Married Jessie Beatrice Cundiff on April 5, 1940 in Boise, ID. Children:
- aa. James Madison Amyx, Jr., born 3/5/1941, md. 4/5/1940, Patricia Helen Hamilton.
1. Troy James Amyx, born 9/15/1964, md. 7/14/1989, Kimberly Wilson
  2. Todd Madison Amyx, born 5/12/1968,
- bb. Larry Glen Amyx, born 7/27/1943.
- cc. Joseph Wayne Amyx, born 10/30/1944, md. 1/22/1963, Donna Jane Cockum
1. Thressa Kay Amyx, born 8/3/1963.
  2. Therenna Kay Amyx, born 7/1/1969, md. 3/5/1988, Richard Birney
- dd. Marvin Dale Amyx, born 8/20/1951, md. 1/5/1979, Debra Lynn Corder
1. James Samuel Amyx, born 4/28/1981.
  2. Lyndee Corinne Amyx, born 2/3/1985.
- ee. Linda Louise Amyx, born 2/17/1959, md. 4/4/1981, Dwayne W. Benedict
1. Mikael Wray Benedict, born 6/23/1983.
  2. Patricia Mary Grace Benedict, born 3/27/1991.
- E. James (Jay) Samuel Amyx, Jr., born September 27, 1923 in Decatur, TX. Married Martha Louise Ratts on December 24, 1945 in Wichita, KS.
- aa. Gordon Jay Amyx, born 9/28/1948, married #1 Georganna Gallegoes, #2 Rhoda
1. Shasta Dustin Amyx, born 5/4/1973.
  2. Ira Jo Samuel Amyx, born 4/21/1977.
  3. Terah Jon Daniel Amyx, born 8/15/1981.
- bb. Martha Kay Amyx, born 11/21/1950, married #1 James Norfleet, #2 Tom Cox
- cc. Laurence Samuel Amyx, born and died 7/11/1954.



dd. Duane Colin Amyx, born 6/30/1956, md. 7/13/1974, Debra Yvonne Jones

1. Kencee Kay Amyx, born 8/12/1982.
2. Kendra Colyn Amyx, born 9/4/1984.
3. Calley Kyle Amyx, born 12/23/1985.

ee. Lucretia Nell Amyx, born 12/17/1962, md. 12/24/1983, Tim Bollinger

1. Joshua Silas Bollinger, born 8/1/1988.

ff. Donald Scott Amyx, born 8/21/1965.

1. Tessa LaDon Amyx, born 10/16/1989.
2. Dayne Scott Samuel Amyx, born 2/29/1991.
3. -----?

F. Mary Louise Amyx, born March 4, 1930 in Ponder, TX. Married Lloyd Eugene Stine on October 7, 1950 in Boise, ID. Born November 5, 1923 in Williamsburg, KS. Children:

aa. Sharon Sue Stine, born 8/11/1954, md. 11/5/1971, Mitchell Leland Frank

1. Fredericke Eugene Frank (Johnson), born 5/23/1972.
2. Jeffrey Edward Frank (Johnson), born 7/11/1973.

Children adopted by Sharon Sue Stine's second husband, Clyde Allan Johnson.

3. William (Bill) Riley Amyx, born January 24, 1883 in Sneedville, Hancock County, Tennessee. Died May 6, 1974. Buried in Bolivar Cemetery Denton, TX. Married Mattie Pauline Bates, on December 2, 1906, in Era Cooke County, TX. She was born June 2, 1885 and died February 7, 1959. Buried Bolivar Cemetery. Nancy said that Uncle Bill was a real prissy man, he was always combing his hair, and very proud of his thick, black hair. It was still pretty black when he died. He raised fruit and had lots of bee hives and honey. Children:

A. Constance (Connie) Amyx, born September 14, 1907, and died June 19, 1985. She married Homer Bedford Winstead on October 20, 1928. He died August 13, 1959. Children:

aa. Gailya Nan Winstead, born 8/30/1933, md. 6/4/1955, John Howard Riley

1. John Steven Riley, born 10/19/1956, md. 11/1/1986, Pamela Sue Gibson
2. Brenda Gail Riley, born 11/22/1958, md. 3/27/1982, Paul Ray Everett
3. Richard Scott Riley, born 2/2/1961, md. 6/12/1982, Jacquelyn Susan Leach
4. Mark Alan Riley, born 11/22/1963, md. 6/29/1991, Michelle Audrey Stock

bb. William Bedford Winstead, born 1/24/1942, md. 8/10/1962, Belita Faye Housley

1. Tresa Faye Winstead, born 1/14/1964 md. 5/1987, Kevin Wayne Kirkpatrick
2. Delina Dawn Winstead, born 1/30/1966, md. 7/1985, Danny Kevin Pergram
3. William Brian Winstead, born 8/2/1967.

B. Willie Pauline Amyx, born October 6, 1909, Married Charles Clyde Dosier on May 22, 1937. Born October 12, 1910 and died February 24, 1989. Buried Bolivar, TX. cemetery.

aa. Connie Mae Dosier, 10/2/1938, md. 6/10/1959, Bobby Dale Burgoon

1. James Robert Burgoon, born 11/13/1960, md. 8/8/1986, Betty Ann Tipton.
2. William Charles Burgoon, born 5/23/1963, md. 8/4/1984, Susan Kay Coleman
3. Amy Elizabeth Burgoon, born 10/15/1965, md. 2/8/1992, John Clifton Duncan
4. Thomas Andrew Burgoon, born 2/19/1971.

bb. Paula Beth Dosier, born 10/12/1943, md. 1/31/1994, Trine David Tarbet

1. David Paul Tarbet, born 7/4/1965.
2. Timothy Brian Tarbet, born 10/27/1968.
3. Joanna Elizabeth Tarbet, born 10/31/1972.
4. Judith Katrine Tarbet, born 9/2/1976.

C. Glen Bates Amyx, born April 5, 1911 in Slidell. TX. Died July 3, 1993. Married Claradine LeSueur on November 6, 1936 in Vernon, TX. She was born December 19, 1914 in Austin, TX. Children:

aa. Mary Ann Amyx, born 10/8/1937, md. 8/3/1973, Phil Allen Grage

bb. Clara Glenadine Amyx, 10/10/1938, md. 10/20/1956, Randall Galen Young

1. Judith Lynn Young, born 9/13/1957, md. 4/29/1977, William H. Hubbard
2. Cynthia Ann Young, born 2/8/1959, md. 5/26/1988, Joe Denney
3. David Russell Young, born 11/15/1961.
4. Margaret Ruth Young, md. 7/11/1986, Alex Coyle

cc. Martha Jo Amyx, born 10/8/1932, md. 10/5/1963, 1 Grover Brendle, 2 Fred Brown.

1. Douglas Anthony Brendle, 8/10/1965, md. 11/21/1986. Christi Webb
2. Garry Clark Brendle, born 12/8/1967.
3. Kathy Leeann Brown, born 4/2/1981.

dd. Frank Bates Amyx, born 7/10/1942, md. 6/22/1962, Jeanette Marie Krohn

1. Aaron Allen Amyx, born 2/13/1965.
2. Alice Alizabeth Amyx, born 10/24/1968.

ee. Charles Hardy Amyx (Twin), born 1/21/1946, md. 12/18/1966, Sherry Reynolds

1. Rodney Wayne Amyx, born 4/6/1967.
2. Kenneth Alan Amyx, born 1/5/1971.

ff. Charlene Hurst Amyx (Twin), born 1/21/1946, md. 3/24/1970, William Hill

1. Ginger Marie Hill, born 3/14/1971.
2. Troy Glen Hill, born 12/23/1972.



3. Kenneth John Hill, born 6/8/1974.

Second marriage of Charlene to John C. Kuhaupt. Third marriage to-----Herman.

gg. Cherry Lee Amyx, born 4/5/1953, md. 1976, Thomas Williams

1. Jack Thomas Williams, III, born 9/20/1979.
2. Amanda Ann Williams, born 4/27/1981.
3. Joy Williams, born 2/28/1984.
4. Rexie Lee Williams.

hh.. Richard Allen Amyx, born 1/3/1957, md. 1 Terry, 2 Debbie Sass

1. Amber Nicole Amyx, born 4/24/1986.

D. Edith Amyx (Twin), born August 2, 1913, married John D. Porter on September 27, 1936. He died October 10, 1990. Children:

aa. David Porter, born 9/28/1938.

bb. John D. Porter, born 8/31/1941.

cc. Barbara Ann Porter, born 8/30/1943, md. 8/29/1964, Edgar Duncan, #2 Terry Brown.

1. Darrin Brent Duncan, born 9/10/1965.
2. Amy Lynne Duncan, born 4/7/1967.

dd. Linda Hazel Porter, born 6/20/1946, md. 7/3/1968, John Magee

1. Chad Wayne Magee, born 2/14/1969.
2. Angela Denise Magee, born 4/17/1970.

ee. Karen Sue Porter, born 6/6/1956, md. 6/26/1983, Rick Tuggle

1. Lindsay Tuggle, born 8/29/1985.

E. Edwin Amyx (Twin), born August 2, 1913 in Greenwood, TX. Married Ethel Irene Whiteaker on April 6, 1935 in Gainesville, TX. She was born January 16, 1917 in Gunter, TX. Children:

aa. Eddie Ronald Amyx, born 4/15/1936, md. 6/1/1956, Billie Jean McHargue.

1. Bridget Gayle Amyx, born 7/8/1957, md. 8/1978, Stan Dacus.
2. Kellie L. Amyx, born 3/17/1966, md. 7/1988, Chipper Van Steengberg.

bb. Carolyn Sue Amyx, born 7/8/19, md. 1955, #1 Paul Norwood, md. 1962, #2 Robert Lewis Crum, md. 1978, #3 Frank Nuncio.

1. Michael P. Norwood, born 1/6/1956, #1-----, #2 Sharon Ann De Loach
2. Susan Denise Norwood, born 9/18/1957, md. 4/6/1979, Barry Mervine
3. Mark Edwin James Norwood, born 12/29/1958.

4. Adam Jeffery Crum, born 1/21/1964, md. 8/17/1982, Sheri Lynn Smith
5. Craig Steven Nunciom 7/17/1967.
6. Christopher Martin Nuncio, born 2/9/1969.

cc. William Riley Amyx, born 4/21/1940, married Sandra Kay Campbell

1. Kimberly Kay Amyx, married Tracy Brown
2. Ronnie Wayne Amyx, married Elizabeth
3. Tamara Lynn Amyx

dd. James Whiteaker Amyx, born 4/2/1942, married #1 Peggy Richardson, #2 Sherry

1. James Keven Amyx, born 12/29/1962, md. 10/5/1991, Amy Jo Hubbard
2. Justin Kyle Amyx, married Denice
3. Carley Sue Amyx by (Sherry Sue), born 8/1/1988.

ee. Robert Earl Amyx, born and died 4/4/1946.

F. Alberle Esten Amyx, born April 30, 1916 in Cottonwood, TX. Married Gwen Alyne Giles on March 4, 1939 in Sanger, TX. She was born August 13, 1915 in Goodview, TX. Children:

aa. Alberlyne Amyx, born 1/24/1940, md. 1956, #1 Bobby Dwayne Wilburn, md. 1960

#2 Bobby Jerrell Pennington

1. Ted Wayne Wilburn, born 2/7/1958, md. 12/20/1986, Rebecca Maldanado
2. Alberlyne Renee' Pennington, born 5/8/1964, md. 5/25/1985, David Rutledge

bb. John Clyde Amyx, born 11/22/1941, md. 4/7/1962, Lola Mae Slough

1. Jeffery Clayton Amyx, born 4/26/1964, md. 8/18/1984, Diane Sutton
2. Leif Amyx, born 10/24/1967.
3. Jennifer Amyx, born 4/14/1970, md. 11/18/1989, Blake Altman

cc. Janice Rhea Amyx, born 9/5/1948, md. 4/9/1974, Nathan Nance

1. Lisa Nance (Twin), born 11/9/1973.
2. Laurie Nance (Twin), born 11/9/1973.
3. Kerrie Rhea Nance, born 9/29/1976.

dd. Jill Denise Amyx, born 10/15/1952, md. 7/11/1975, Alfred J. Louque

1. Hary Louque, born 4/10/1972.
2. Julie Louque, born 10/10/1973.

4. Jack Thomas Amyx, born January 20, 1885 in Sneedville, Hancock County, TN. Died May 21, 1902 in Bolivar, TX. Buried in Bolivar Cemetery.

5. Mack Coy Amyx, born February 28, 1886 in Sneedville, Hancock County, TN. died February 5, 1974. Buried in Bolivar Cemetery, Bolivar, TX. Married Mary Hester Shugart on March 1, 1909 in Denton, TX. She was born December 4, 1884, and died March 4,



1960. Buried in Bolivar Cemetery, Bolivar, TX. Uncle Coy had a farm and a dairy, and he carried his milk to Fort Worth. He, just like all of Mother's brothers, were a lot of fun. Mother, Daddy, Jolene, Roy and I went to Denton to Uncle Coy's and Aunt Mary's 50th wedding anniversary. One time Uncle Coy was very sick. He had an allergic reaction to penicillin and big blisters came up all over his body. He couldn't even stand for a sheet to be on him. Eventually the skin would just peel off. I can remember his family really worrying about him. But gradually he got well. Children:

A. Carl William Amyx, born July 18, 1910, died October 20, 1910. Buried Bolivar, TX.

B. Lee McCoy Amyx, born August 13, 1913. Died December 11, 1962. Buried in Sanger, TX. Married Opal Bode on September 18, 1932. She was born March 28, 1910. Children:

aa. Coy Thomas Amyx, born 8/9/1932, md. 12/6/1952, Ethelyn Ready

1. Kyle Erskine Amyx, born 10/6/1953, married Cindy

2. Teal Ann Amyx, born 9/4/1961.

bb. Lee McCoy Amyx, Jr., born 9/12/1935, md. 10/20/1958, Wanda Sauls

1. Brandon Lee Amyx, born 6/24/1960, married Sonya

2. Michael Don Amyx, born 11/28/1961.

cc. Carroll Don Amyx, born 3/5/1938, md. 2/22/1958, Sue Ann Harris

1. Donna Sue Amyx, born 3/17/1959, md. 10/16/1985, Kevin Patton

2. Carol Ann Amyx, born 4/29/1961.

dd. Mary Rosene Amyx, born 7/21/1939, md. 2/21/1959, Jimmy Sebastian

1. Steven Sebastian, born 10/27/1959, married Karen

2. James Sebastian, born 1/12/1963, married Clydienne

ee. Chesley Shirlene Amyx, born 7/23/1942, md. 1/2/1963, William L. Hicks

1. Larry Hicks (Twin), born 9/19/1963.

2. Leslie Hicks (Twin), born 9/19/1963, married Cathey

3. Lisa Hicks

ff. Cherry Ann (Pie) Amyx, born 11/24/1943, md. 11/28/1968, Ronald Boyce

1. Tiann Beard, born 6/6/1970, md. 7/14/1990, Christopher Lee Frazier

2. Ronalee Beard, born 1/31/1974.

3. Brady Boyce Beard, born 10/26/1976.

C. Eliza Agnes Amyx, born April 22, 1916, married James Cowan Tritt on May 25, 1935 in Denton, TX. He was born October 14, 1911. Children:

aa. James Cowan Tritt, Jr., born 5/30/1944, married Nancy Brown

1. James Cowan Tritt, III, born 6/23/1969.

2. Summer Lynn Tritt, born 3/7/1972.

D. Winnie True Amyx, born September 15, 1918. Married John C. Robison on October 26, 1946. He was born November 20 1916. Children:

aa. Charlotte Ann Robison, 8/9/1946, md. 2/14/1987, William P. Evans

bb. Cary Alan Robison, born 5/18/1951, md. 2/14/1976, Denise Klette

1. Christopher Alan Robison, born 10/16/1979.

2. Traci DeAnn Robison, born 10/2/1983.

E. Clyde Edward Amyx, born and died June 17, 1922. Buried Bolivar, TX.

F. James Irvin Amyx, born February 20, 1924 in Justin, TX. Married Tillie Joyce Taylor on January 5, 1946 in Mineral Wells, TX. She was born November 13, 1925 in Pilot Point, TX. Children:

aa. James Aaron Amyx, born 6/2/1951, md. 5/26/1972, Jana Lynn Jones

1. James Aaron Amyx, Jr., born 7/31/1974.

2. Julie K. Amyx, born 4/10/1976.

3. Jena Rhea Amyx, born 1/31/1979.

(Second marriage of Mack Coy Amyx to Lou LeGear on October 14, 1961. She was born February 7, 1894 and died February 10, 1984. Buried in Sanger, TX.)

6. Fannie Amyx, born January 12, 1889 in Sneedville, Hancock Co. TN. Died March 13, 1904 in Bolivar, TX.

7. Hattie Clyde Amyx, born March 3, 1891 in Sneedville, Hancock County, TN. Died February 26, 1977. Buried Fowler, CA. Married Clarence Monroe Thompson on February 2, 1913. He was born September 23, 1894 and died in 1983. Aunt Hattie and Uncle Clarence lived with Grandpa for quite awhile. They moved to Memphis, TX and lived at Wayside Inn. Nancy remembers spending the night when it was cold and Aunt Hattie warmed the iron and put it at the foot of her bed to warm her feet. They had picnics in the park at Wayside Inn. Uncle Clarence was a jovial fella. Aunt Hattie would always make cornmeal mush for Myrtle and family when they visited. I never did know their children, but had the opportunity to meet Earl and Ernestine at Lewis's funeral in 1990. Owran told me that his Daddy always liked for Aunt Hattie to come and help them make syrup, because she could really make good syrup. Owran and Goldie went to Aunt Hattie's and bought their black wash pot when Uncle Clarence and Aunt Hattie sold everything and moved to California. Children:

A. Earl Ross Thompson, born July 17, 1914 in Slidell, TX. Married Willie Ernestine Hicks on October 11, 1933 in Gainesville, TX. She was born February 7, 1918 in Valley View, TX. Children:

aa. Charles Ross Thompson, born 7/9/1937, md. 1957 #1 Ronnie Tate, #2 Vivian



## Meaders

1. Ronda Alice Thompson, born 12/25/1958, md. 1973 #1 Winn Freeman, #2 Charles Martin. (Ronnie's child)
  2. Tracy Lynn Thompson, born 12/22/1968, md. 7/18/1992, Eddy Harris; (Vivian's child)
  3. Brian Scott Thompson, (Vivian's child), born 2/28/1972.
- bb. Donald Wayne Thompson, born 6/10/1939, md. 1964, #1 Josephine Aguirre, #2 Joan Karen Jacobson, md 1977.
1. Mathew Thompson, born 9/21/1964, married Karen
  2. Mark Brendon Thompson, born 10/19/1967.
- cc. Betty Jane Thompson, born 6/12/1945, md. 6/29/1963, Kenneth Wayne Carlile
1. Chrissie Rashelle Carlile, born 3/12/1965, married Jerry Dale Hill
  2. April Denise Carlile, born 8/5/1966, married John Raymond Brashera (Divorced)
- dd. Ernest Allen Thompson, born 1/3/1952, md. 11/19/1971, Debbie Largent
1. Marshall Brian Thompson, born 5/6/1972.
  2. Angela Dawn Thompson, born 6/26/1977.

## Second marriage of Ernest Allen Thompson to Karen Renee Davis

- B. Ethel Orlene Thompson, born May 16, 1916 in Sanger, TX. Married Frank Peyton on June 19, 1940 in Las Vegas, NV. He was born November 14, 1914 in OK. Died May 3, 1961 in Fowler, CA. Children:
- aa. Aletha Peyton, born 2/16/1955, md. 9/10/1977, Charles Pruner
1. Stephanie Lynn Pruner, born 1/18/1979.
  2. Sarah Nicole Pruner, born 12/3/1982.
8. Carrie Amyx, born February 9, 1893 in Sneedville, Hancock County, TN. Died July 3, 1964 and buried in Sanger Cemetery, Sanger, TX. She married Tobe Borris Higgs on August 1, 1909. He was born March 13, 1882 in Sneedville, Hancock county, TN. Died December 9, 1952 at Sanger, TX. Aunt Carrie and Uncle Tobe bought Grandpa Amyx's home place. It had a big Texas porch that wrapped around 3 sides of the house. Aunt Carrie's house was always the gathering place when relatives came. They had the best soft water, and I remember taking bubble baths in her big old tub, in the old house, before it burned. Two houses and 1 barn burned on the homesite. Aunt Carrie had a dairy, just like most of the sisters and brothers, at one time. We always went out to the barn to "bother" Burness Ray and Billy Jack, but mainly we bothered the cows, because Burness Ray always said they wouldn't give as much milk when company came. Burness Ray still lives on the homeplace. Children:
- A. Olen Higgs, born August 21, 1910 in Denton County, TX. Died May 26, 1992 and buried at Sanger, TX. Married Lillian Tritt on July 5, 1930 in Marietta, Love Co., OK. She was born October 28, 1913 in Denton County, TX. Children:

- aa. Tommie Joyce Higgs, born 4/26/1931, married Quincy Merl Hughes
  - 1. Curtis Neal Hughes, born 7/15/1950, md. 3/5/1984, Sheila Jean Collendrina
  - 2. David Lynn Hughes, born 1/18/1952, #1 married Betty---? #2-----
- bb. Carl Ray Higgs, born 1/16/1933, md. 6/1/1952, Nelva Jane Powell
  - 1. Russel Len Higgs, born 3/22/1957, died 6/14/1979, md. 6/1/1977, Tammie Lynn Kincaid They had: 1. Stephanie Higgs, born 1/9/1980.
- cc. Charles Huston Higgs, born 7/31/1935, md. 6/12/1955, Mary Jane Dickey
  - 1. Rebecca Jane Higgs, born 2/11/1956, md. #1 Ronald Herrin #2 Patrick Koehler
  - 2. Donald Wade Higgs, born 11/30/1957, married #1 Robin #2 Julie
  - 3. Robert Craig Higgs, born 9/22/1960, married #1 Tami Leigh Threlkeld #2 Jeannette Koehler
- dd. James Olen Higgs, born 7/21/1937, md. 6/6/1955, Patsy Jean Douglas
  - 1. Jamie Christine Higgs, born 1/24/1956, married Gary Reiman
  - 2. Jeffery Paul Higgs, born 5/5/1958, married #1 Debbie Bryant #2 Kathy
- ee. Dale Higgs, born 9/9/1939, md. 2/9/1963, Mary Tessie Jesso
  - 1. Steven Dale Higgs, born 6/25/1964, married Brenda
  - 2. Terry Don Higgs, born 9/10/1967, married Kelley
  - 3. Michelle Higgs, born 6/29/1970, md. 7/6/1991, Donnie Joe Offield
- ff. Betty Sue Higgs, born 10/15/1941, md. 6/1/1963, George Robert Chauncey
  - 1. James Robert Chauncey, born 2/15/1965, married Kristie
  - 2. Timothy Wayne Chauncey, born 3/13/1966, md. 5/1/1993, Tracy Hollandingsworth
  - 3. Chad Edward Chauncey, born 10/2/1977.
- B. Sam Huston Higgs, born July 7, 1915, died September 21, 1990. He is buried in Sanger, TX. Married Jane Thatcher on January 1, 1937. She was born March 27, 1918 and died September 20, 1979. Children:
  - aa. Joe Crystal Higgs, born 10/3/1937, md. 3/22/1958, Elizabeth Gillum
    - 1. Joey Chrystal Higgs, born 12/4/1960.
    - 2. Christy Ann Higgs, born 4/18/1964.
  - bb. Jackie Higgs, born 11/30/1945, md. 9/25/1966, Jerry Prater
    - 1. Carrie Lisa Prater, born 5/25/1967.
  - cc. Marinel Higgs, born 7/24/1947, md. 12/22/1968, Terry Wayne Lewis
    - 1. Lauren Leigh Lewis, born 3/21/1983.
- C. Burness Ray Higgs, born March 26, 1928 in Stony, TX. Married Billie Dean Allen on August 1, 1953 in Denton, TX. She was born April 9, 1929 in Lubbock, TX. Children:



aa. Tobie Allen Higgs, born 6/20/1954.

bb. Marsha Ruth Higgs, born 7/13/1958.

D. Billy Jack Higgs, born December 18, 1930. Married Gladys Marie Cockrell on August 27, 1949. She was born December 21, 1932. Billy married #2 Margaret Oliver on September 6, 1980. Children by first marriage:

aa. Dana Irene Higgs, born 9/13/1955.

bb. Stanley Raynard Higgs, born 6/24/1958, md. 9/6/1980, Margaret Oliver

9. Zannie Manerva Amyx, born May 29, 1895 in Sneedville, Hancock County, TN. Died July 14, 1976 and buried in Sanger, Denton County, TX. Married George (Boss) Davis on January 24, 1915. He was born July 14, 1893 and died April 11, 1971 and buried in Sanger Cemetery. Aunt Zannie lived across the road from Uncle Tide. There was a windmill, an interesting landmark, right in the middle of the road between their houses. Uncle Boss farmed up until he got sick. Mother went to help Aunt Zannie take care of Uncle Boss until he died. Aunt Zannie's house was built by Daddy, Bill Rice. It was always nice and clean. Aunt Zannie went to stay with Mother one fall, and I have a picture of her sitting in a chair quilting, then she must have taken Mother's picture quilting in the same chair. They sure did favor. I have a little story to tell on Aunt Zannie, Aunt Carrie, and Aunt Hattie, that was told to me by Mother.

"Grandpa had a surrey with a nice trotting horse. The three girls rode the surrey into Bolivar, one Saturday afternoon. Now they had it planned to show off. Aunt Hattie gave the horse a "whip" to make it get--up--and--go, and when she did, the end of the whip got stuck in the "rear-end" of the horse. Well, this sure enough made the horse get---up---and go! It started bucking and the whip started flopping up and down, all right in front of these old men sitting there on the street! Aunt Zannie started yelling, "Get it Carrie, get it." The men ran out and caught the horse, the girls retrieved the whip, and got the heck out of town! Needless to say, they were very embarrassed!"

Aunt Zannie and Uncle Boss had one daughter:

A. Ola May Davis, born July 15, 1920 and died January 18, 1994 in San Luis Obispo, CA. Married B. J. Barto on August 22, 1956. He was born March 13, 1923.

10. Henry Edward Amyx, born August 28, 1898 in Slidell, Denton County, TX. Died December 12, 1960. Buried in Dalhart, TX. Married Fannie Mae Depew on December 15, 1918. She was born September 21, 1897 in Fannin County, TX. She died February 3, 1967 and buried in Dalhart, TX. Children:

A. William (Bill) Henry Amyx, born September 1, 1920 near Era, TX. Married #1 Nadine Reynolds Allender on June 29, 1939. She was born September 24, 1920.

#2 Kathlene McCathern on July 13, 1947. She was born July 13, 1923 in Cameron, NM and died January 12, 1960. Buried in Memorial Park Cemetery, Amarillo, TX. Their child:

aa. Janice Lee Amyx, born 5/4/1948, md. 7/23/1971, #1 Kenneth Leo Baker, md. 8/8/1988, #2 James Eugene Thompson

William Henry Amyx married #3 Joye Darlene Jones Martin on December 16, 1961.  
Stepchildren:

aa. Sharon Kay Martin, born 1/18/1951      bb. Jerry Don Martin, born 2/18/1952.  
md. 1978, Ricky Dicks                              ----- died 9/13/1982.

B. Priscilla Dean Amyx, born January 27, 1923 in Perryton, TX. Died July 2, 1980. Buried in Misson Park Cemetery, San Antonio, TX.. Married Jacob Augustus Stringer on July 23, 1946 in Orlando, FL. He was born January 26, 1947 in Macon, Georgia. Children:

aa. Patricia Lynn Stringer, born 4/4/1947, md. 5/26/1984, Robert Hamilton Cuyler

1. Joshua Robert Cuyler, born 5/31/1986.
2. Christopher Robert Cuyler (Stepchild), born 5/31/1970.
3. Kevin Robert Cuyler (Stepchild), born 2/15/1972.

bb. David Lloyd Stringer, born 7/19/1952, md. 8/9/1980, Belva Jean Turnbo

1. Kara Elizabeth Stringer, born 12/6/1986.
2. David Clayton Stringer, born 22/11/1988.

cc. Pamela Mae Stringer, born 11/23/1959, died 3/24/1962.

C. James Everett Amyx, born March 6, 1925 in Perryton, TX. on the J.W. Depew Farm. Married Ida May McClellan on June 24, 1946 in Dalhart, TX. She was born September 28, 1928 in Texline, TX. Children:

aa. Richard Franklin Amyx, born 4/3/1947, md. 2/8/1975, Rebecca Gail Gaultney

1. Paul Franklin Amyx, born 6/12/1979.
2. Miranda Gale Amyx, born 1/25/1983.

bb. Daniel Lee Amyx, born 6/18/1948, md. 5/4/1967, #1 Sandra Kay Insel. Their child:

1. Kenneth Wayne Amyx, born 11/28/1967, md. 6/23/1990, Robin Reddin  
Second marriage of Daniel: 1977, #2 Suzanne Johnson. Their child:  
1. Fredda Nicole Amyx, born 7/8/1980.  
Third marriage of Daniel: 1993, #3 Vicky Shultz

cc. Donna Susan Amyx, born 7/11/1959, md. 7/20/1979, Michael Glen Otts

1. Barry Glen Otts, born 2/27/1982.
2. Ashley Nicole Otts, born 12/9/1987.



11. Myrtle Marie Amyx, born February 2, 1901 in Slidell, Denton County, TX. Died March 4, 1983 in Oklahoma City, OK. Buried in Sanger, TX. Cemetery. Married William Clinton Rice on November 26, 1919 in Denton County, TX. He was born on May 7, 1895 in Indian Territory in Vanoss Oklahoma, and died July 18, 1961 in Quanah, TX. Buried in Sanger, TX. Cemetery. Children:

A. Lewis Frank Rice, born June 6, 1921 in Sanger, Denton County, TX. Died August 7, 1990. Buried in Coalinga, Fresno Co., CA. Married Margie Lee Hawkins on March 6, 1943 in Norman, OK. Margie was born June 11, 1925 in OK. Children:

aa. David Lewis Rice, born 11/11/1944, md. 6/12/1964, Beth Charlotte Hopkins

1. Jeffery David Rice, born 4/29/1967, md. Sarah Jen Ragalda

2. Bart Aaron Rice, born 11/5/1969, md. 6/10/1989, Sheryl Speh

bb. Donald Lee Rice, born 12/8/1947, md. Julia Carroll

1. Carrie Amanda Rice, born 12/9/1972, md. 7/9/1994, Wendell Charles Hand

2. David Benjamin Rice, born 12/27/1975.

cc. Elizabeth Ann Rice, born 12/22/1949, md. 6/12/1969, Donald Wallace Harris.

1. Stephanie Caroline Harris, born 11/26/1972.

2. Gregory James Harris, born 1/3/1977.

dd. Martha Sharon Rice, born 3/1/1954, md. 8/29/1974, Stephen Robert Jones

1. Jennifer Elaine Jones, born 5/15/1978.

2. Cy Justin Jones, born 7/25/1979.

B. Nancy Lee Rice, born February 19, 1924. Married Glen Harris (Dick) Barfell on December 21, 1955. Dick was born April 18, 1921. Child:

aa. Glenna Jeanne Barfell, born 11/9/1953, md. 8/9/1975, Larry Clinton Snook

1. Jason Ryan Snook, born 10/31/1979.

2. Nesha Marie Snook, born 6/5/1984.

C. Mary Vencil Rice, born February 18, 1924 in Sanger, TX. Married Howard Eugene Hudson on February 3, 1946 in Eldorado, Jackson Co., OK. Gene was born September 2, 1924 in Elsworth, KS. He died November 3, 1987. Buried in Yukon, OK. Cemetery. Children:

aa. Nancy Carol Hudson, born 5/3/1947, married #1 Harvey Humphrey.

Second Marriage #2 Paul Edward Campbell. Their Children:

1. Kimberly Lynn Marsh Campbell, born 5/28/1974.

2. Colin Patrick Clark Campbell, born 5/26/1976.

Third marriage, 9/18/1981, #3 Brian Lee Toms He adopted Nancy's first son:

3. John Matthew Hudson Toms, born 8/18/1971.

- bb. Marsha Dianne Hudson, born 3/26/1950, married #1 Michael Crowell Their Children:
1. Michael Anthony Crowell, born 11/30/1969, md. 2/29/1992, Shaelea Caldwell
    - 1a. Kaelea Lynn, born 7/3/1993.
    - 2a. Zakry Michael, born 10/5/1994.
  2. Rayburn Howard Crowell, born 12/27/1970, md. 10/26/1991, Hillary Heather Hayes

Marsha md. 2/14/1975, #2 Johnnie Lynn Barnes Their Child:

1. Melicia Dianne Barnes, born 12/14/1976.
2. Christina Kay Barnes, born 9/8/1970. (Stepchild)

cc. William Howard Hudson, born 10/30/1951, md. 10/3/1979, Linda Karen Nabors

1. Ragenia Lynn Hudson (Stepchild)
2. Crystal Brooke Hudson, born 5/19/1981.
3. Megan Elizabeth Hudson, born 3/27/1987.

dd. Ronald Steve Hudson, born 8/26/1953, md. 6/16/1977, Karla Diane Estlinbaum

1. Daniel Steve Hudson, born 12/14/1977.
2. Expecting!

D. Margaret Marie Rice, born August 13, 1931 in Memphis, Hall County, TX. She married Jimmy Newton Walker on September 10, 1949 in Eldorado, Jackson Co., OK. He was born March 6, 1924 in Eldorado, OK. Children:

aa. Beverly Joan Walker, born 1/5/1953, md. 8/23/1975, Joseph W. Giberson

bb. Karen Sue Walker, born 10/16/1956, married #1 Jay \_\_\_\_ ? Their Child:

1. Lara Sue \_\_\_\_ ? Freeburg, born 6/2/1981 (Adopted by Keith Freeburg)

Karen md. 12/10/1982, #2 Keith Richard Freeburg Their children:

1. Colleen Ann Freeburg, born 3/6/1987.
2. Michael Walker Freeburg, born 5/4/1989.

E. Billy Floyd Rice was born August 3, 1933 in Memphis, TX. He married Betty Rogers on October 23, 1953 in Oklahoma City, OK. She was born March 10, 1934.

Children:

aa. Billy Floyd Rice, Jr., born 9/1/1954, md. 7/27/1975, Sherry Allen

1. Billy Floyd Rice, III, born 11/19/1984.

bb. Kathy Joan Rice, born 4/9/1957, md. 11/14/1975, David Edward Ballinger

1. Lisa Marie Ballinger, born 10/23/1977.



- 2. Bryan William Ballinger, born 12/27/1980.
- cc. Kelly Anette Rice, born 11/2/1964, md. 7/23/1982, Rodney Lee Fuller
  - 1. Matthew Lee Fuller, born 6/8/1984.
  - 2. Clayton Lee Fuller, born 3/10/1989.
- F. Clara Bell Rice, born September 24, 1935 in Memphis, TX. Married Ronald Lee Duckers on June 29, 1957 in Eldorado, Jackson County, OK. Ronald was born May 25, 1935 in Chicago, Cook Co., IL. Children:
  - aa. Ronda Ellen Duckers, born 1/17/1959, md. 4/24/1993, David Ronald Read
  - bb. Derek Van Duckers, born 12/7/1965, md. 6/15/1991, Cheryl Lynn Palusek
    - 1. Blake Harrison Duckers, born 12/10/1993.
- G. Gloria Jean Rice, born January 10, 1942 in Eldorado, OK. Married Roy Emory West on April 27, 1959 in Altus, Jackson Co. OK. Roy was born August 18, 1938 in Eldorado, OK. Jackson County. Children:
  - aa. Debra Diann West, born 12/12/1959, md. 6/8/1985, Michael Allen Hignite
    - 1. Kathryn Rachelle Hignite, born 10/7/1989.
  - bb. Sarah Marie West, born 2/3/1961, md. 5/30/1981, Terrence Allen Doherty
    - 1. Heather Anne Doherty, born 2/8/1985.
    - 2. Rachel Leigh Doherty, born 3/29/1986.
    - 3. Aaron Jonathan Doherty, born 12/30/1987.
  - cc. Roy Christopher West, born 10/15/1962, md. 8/28/1982, Kelly Gean Partin
    - 1. Christopher Erik West, born 5/6/1987.
    - 2. Joshua Ryan West, born 3/23/1990.
  - dd. Laura Jean West, born 6/15/1967, md. 3/24/1990, Mark Christopher Miller
    - 1. Christopher Carson Miller born 4/1/1984, (Stepchild)
    - 2. Savannah Jean Miller, born 12/18/1990.
    - 3. Brendan Lee Miller, born 9/30/1993
    - 4. Expecting!
- H. Eva Jolene Rice, born April 8, 1944 in Eldorado, OK. Married Billy Wayne Gilbert June 10, 1962. Billy was born in Goodlett, Hardeman Co., TX. on March 4, 1943. Children:
  - aa. Richard Wayne Gilbert, born 3/5/1963.
  - bb. Billy Clinton Gilbert, born 4/22/1965, md. 10/22/1988, Regina Lynn Muzny
    - 1. Sierra Lynn Gilbert, born 11/5/1993.

cc. Sherry Denise Gilbert, born 1/7/1969, md. 2/4/1989, Terry Lynn Torres  
 1. Tonya Nicole Torres, born 8/2/1989.

12. Fred Barnabus Amyx, born March 23, 1903 in Slidell Denton county, TX. Died November 19, 1976 and is buried in the Bolivar Cemetery, Bolivar, TX. He married #1 Monnie Lee Ramsey on July 10, 1921. She was born October 18, 1904 and died October 23, 1930. She is buried in the Bolivar Cemetery. They had the following children:

A. Norma Lee Amyx, born April 5, 1924. Died June 26, 1986 and is buried in Jackson Cemetery, Krum Denton County, TX. She married #1 Samuel Enlow. Their child:

aa. Emmett Lee Enlow, born 2/4/1940 md. #1 Florence Mathieson Their Child:  
 1. Kathy Lee Enlow, born 10/26/1961.

Emmett married #2 Diane Heintz Their Child:  
 2. Kristyne Enlow, born 11/18/1988.

(Norma Lee married #2 James E. Harris)

B. Billie Jean Amyx, born October 17, 1925. She married #1 Clyde William Harris. Child:

aa. Rheta Beth Harris, born 10/20/1943, md. 2/24/1962, Billy Wayne Spurlock  
 1. Janet Renea Spurlock, born 12/6/1962, married Russ Solomon  
 2. Sherrill Lynn Spurlock, born 4/17/1975.

(Billie Jean married #2 Thomas Conroy Barry)

C. Fred Jack Amyx, born October 14, 1930, stillborn.

(Fred Barnabus Amyx married #2 Audra Durham on January 7, 1936. Children:)

D. Elizabeth Josephine Amyx, born February 23, 1938, married Donald Pauley on September 24, 1953.

E. Bettie Jane Amyx, born March 17, 1939. Married Walter Lloyd Gibbs, Jr. on August 2, 1958. Children:

aa. David Dwayne Gibbs, born 7/20/1960, md. 5/1982, Lissa Hill  
 1. James Walter Levi Gibbs, born 4/3/1990.

bb. Dona Jane Gibbs, born 2/19/1962, md. 1/5/1985, Martin Joseph Noto  
 1. Anthony Joseph Noto, born 5/20/1988.  
 2. Harrison Lloyd Noto, born 9/15/1989.

(Third marriage #3 Fred Amyx to Marvel Balthrop on March 23, 1939. She was born June 9,



1913.) It was always a lot of fun to go visit Uncle Fred and Aunt Marvel. She was such a good cook and always had a clean house. Uncle Fred ran a dairy, and we always went out to visit the boys and Uncle Fred while they milked. I remember the creek that ran behind their house. It was so much fun to take walks down that cool creek bed when it was hot. Roy always liked to hear Uncle Fred's jokes, which he could really tell. Uncle Fred was a Baptist, and a mason. Daddy built their house. I remember Ralph telling me that he begged Uncle Bill to let him have some of his chewing tobacco. Uncle Fred said, "Go ahead, Bill, give him a chew." Ralph said it sure did make him sick. I called Ralph and asked him to tell me something about their family. He said Uncle Fred always told them (boys) to use common sense. Uncle Fred was always saying little one liners, such as "She's got freckles on her, but ain't she cute." Aunt Marvel always asked the boys, "Well, what do you think?" when they wanted to know something or were discussing something important. Ralph told me that he, Joe, and Dickie had the reputation for being able to go to town on Saturday, and getting in to as much mischief as other kids took all week to do. Ralph thought farm work was hard when he was growing up, but very rewarding.

Children:

- F. Ralph Dennis Amyx, born November 20, 1940 in Decatur, Wise Co., TX. He married Lela Mae Springer on July 30, 1960 at Lois Baptist Church Valley View, TX. Children:

aa. Curtis Ralph Amyx, born 4/13/1962.

bb. Lela Lynelle Amyx, born 9/27/1966, md. 2/10/1990, David Wayne Stroope  
1. Weston Riley Stroope, born 1/9/1992.

- G. Joe Amos Amyx, born August 9, 1942 in Decatur, TX. Married Elaine Yeargan on June 30, 1962 in Denison, TX. She was born December 31, 1942. Children:

aa. Lora Lee Amyx, born 12/9/1966.

bb. Joe William Amyx, born 6/2/1971.

- F. Dale Rodney (Dickie) Amyx, born March 2, 1945 in Decatur, Wise County, TX. Married Melinda Kay LaGear on June 2, 1967 in Sanger, Denton Co. TX. She was born November 19, 1949 in Denton, TX. Children:

aa. Melody Michelle Amyx, born 9/8/1971, md. 6/20/1992, Mark Shane Compton

bb. Natalie Marie Amyx, born 9/10/1976.

cc. Lanny Lawrence Amyx, born 8/14/1978.

13. Frank Brockman (Tide) Amyx, born May 15, 1905 in Slidell, Denton County, TX. Married Lois Marie Sullivan on February 15, 1930. She was born September 11, 1911, died October 26, 1980. Buried in Sanger Cemetery. Aunt Lois was fun loving and very hospitable. We always spent the night with them when we made a trip to Sanger. She told me one time that if Douglas had been a girl, she was going to name him

Gloria. One time I had to go to the outhouse, and Douglas locked me in. I had to holler and holler to get attention and get out. Uncle Tide always had a nice garden and took great pride in his canning and fruit and vegetables. He could cook as good a meal as any woman. It was always a delight to go and visit Uncle Tide and Aunt Lois. They always made you feel at home and you knew you were welcome. I remember Uncle Tide telling about coming in from outside and Aunt Lois waved goodbye to him, then she went to be with the Lord. As of this date Uncle Tide is still living. He is 89 years old, the youngest child of William Harvey and Orlene Trent Amyx. He is living in Greenwood, SC to be near his son, Douglas, and family; as of the writing of this book. Their Child:

- A. Douglas Leon Amyx, born March 22, 1938. Married Frances Gwendolyn Mays on June 11, 1958 in Denton County, TX. She was born November 23, 1940.  
Children:

aa. Dedra Orlene, born 2/27/1959, md. 7/13/1985, Daniel Howard Hart

bb. Douglas Kelvin Amyx, born 7/28/1960.

cc. Darrett Lyle Amyx, born 4/15/1962.

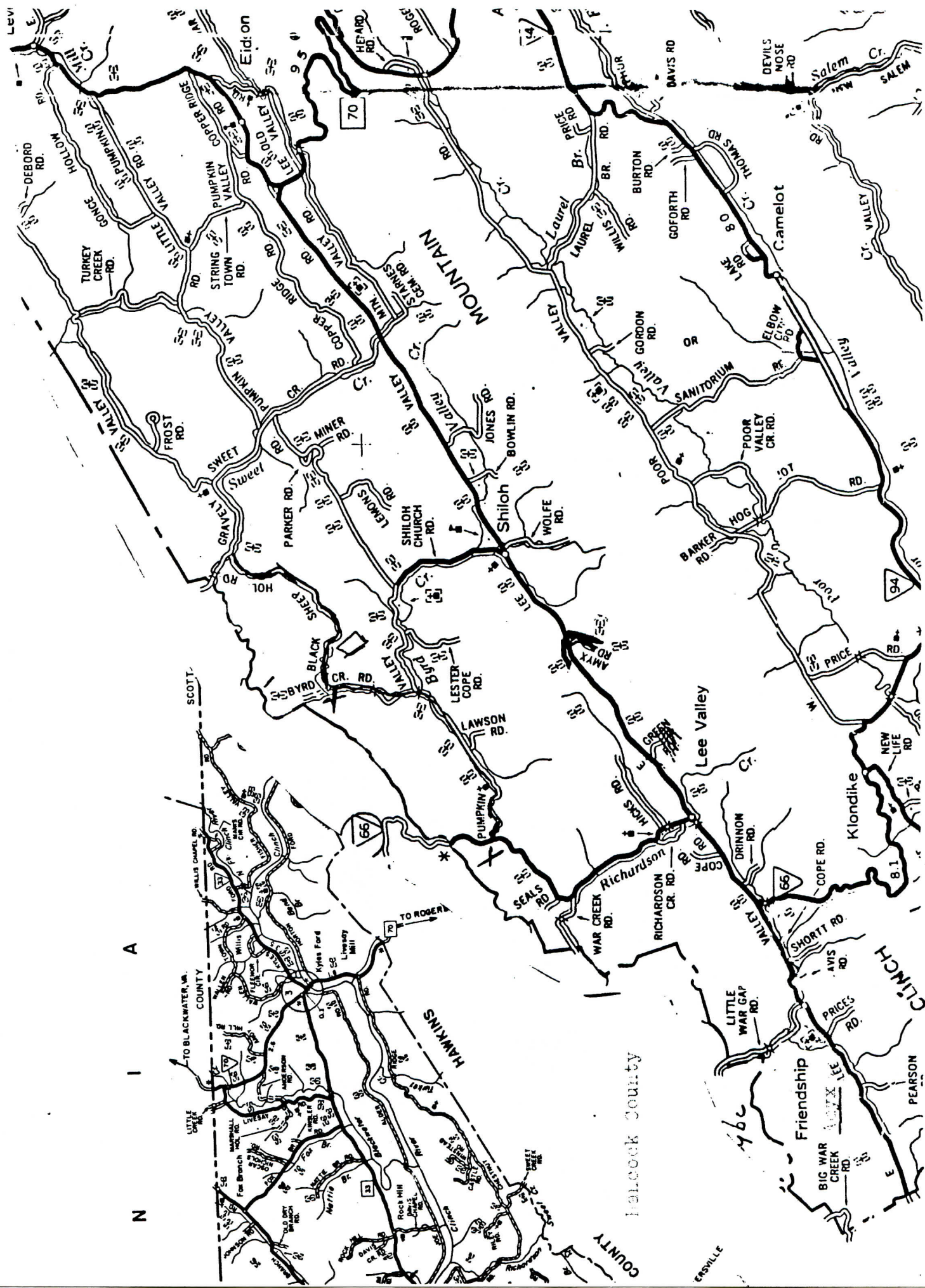
dd. Desiree' Denise Lynn Amyx, born 6/25/1965.

ee. Devlin Lief Amyx, born 7/9/1972.

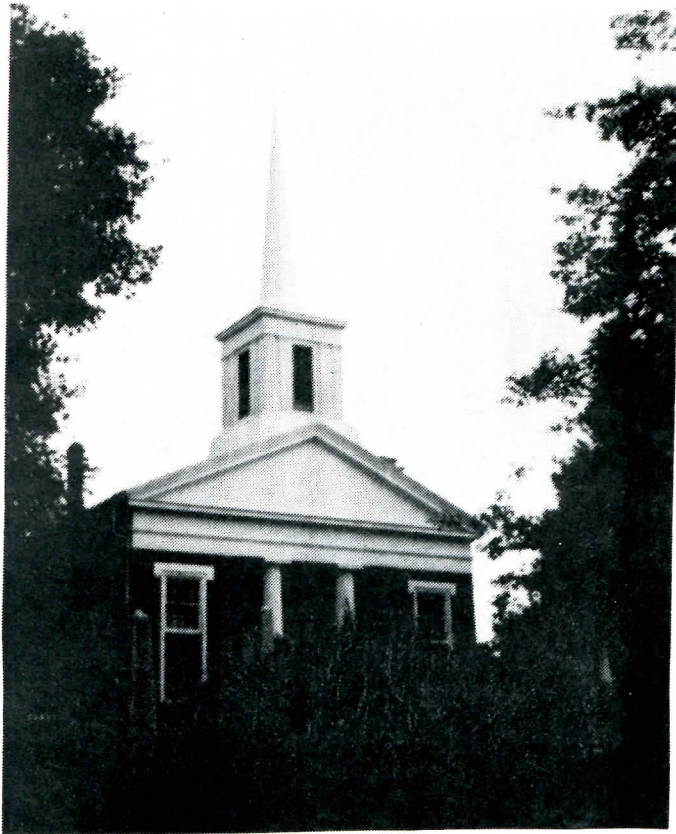
ff. Denee' Frances Amyx, born 12/14/1973.



This is a complex genealogical chart titled "Winstead Family" at the top. It traces the lineage of the Winstead family, starting with "Winstead" and "Cole" as the primary ancestors. The chart is organized into several main branches, each labeled with a circled letter (A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, W, X, Y, Z). Each branch contains a list of names, often followed by birth and death years in parentheses. Some names are underlined, and some are enclosed in boxes. The chart also includes several small, handwritten notes and dates, such as "1815-1818", "1818-1819", "1819-1820", "1820-1821", "1821-1822", "1822-1823", "1823-1824", "1824-1825", "1825-1826", "1826-1827", "1827-1828", "1828-1829", "1829-1830", "1830-1831", "1831-1832", "1832-1833", "1833-1834", "1834-1835", "1835-1836", "1836-1837", "1837-1838", "1838-1839", "1839-1840", "1840-1841", "1841-1842", "1842-1843", "1843-1844", "1844-1845", "1845-1846", "1846-1847", "1847-1848", "1848-1849", "1849-1850", "1850-1851", "1851-1852", "1852-1853", "1853-1854", "1854-1855", "1855-1856", "1856-1857", "1857-1858", "1858-1859", "1859-1860", "1860-1861", "1861-1862", "1862-1863", "1863-1864", "1864-1865", "1865-1866", "1866-1867", "1867-1868", "1868-1869", "1869-1870", "1870-1871", "1871-1872", "1872-1873", "1873-1874", "1874-1875", "1875-1876", "1876-1877", "1877-1878", "1878-1879", "1879-1880", "1880-1881", "1881-1882", "1882-1883", "1883-1884", "1884-1885", "1885-1886", "1886-1887", "1887-1888", "1888-1889", "1889-1890", "1890-1891", "1891-1892", "1892-1893", "1893-1894", "1894-1895", "1895-1896", "1896-1897", "1897-1898", "1898-1899", "1899-1900", "1900-1901", "1901-1902", "1902-1903", "1903-1904", "1904-1905", "1905-1906", "1906-1907", "1907-1908", "1908-1909", "1909-1910", "1910-1911", "1911-1912", "1912-1913", "1913-1914", "1914-1915", "1915-1916", "1916-1917", "1917-1918", "1918-1919", "1919-1920", "1920-1921", "1921-1922", "1922-1923", "1923-1924", "1924-1925", "1925-1926", "1926-1927", "1927-1928", "1928-1929", "1929-1930", "1930-1931", "1931-1932", "1932-1933", "1933-1934", "1934-1935", "1935-1936", "1936-1937", "1937-1938", "1938-1939", "1939-1940", "1940-1941", "1941-1942", "1942-1943", "1943-1944", "1944-1945", "1945-1946", "1946-1947", "1947-1948", "1948-1949", "1949-1950", "1950-1951", "1951-1952", "1952-1953", "1953-1954", "1954-1955", "1955-1956", "1956-1957", "1957-1958", "1958-1959", "1959-1960", "1960-1961", "1961-1962", "1962-1963", "1963-1964", "1964-1965", "1965-1966", "1966-1967", "1967-1968", "1968-1969", "1969-1970", "1970-1971", "1971-1972", "1972-1973", "1973-1974", "1974-1975", "1975-1976", "1976-1977", "1977-1978", "1978-1979", "1979-1980", "1980-1981", "1981-1982", "1982-1983", "1983-1984", "1984-1985", "1985-1986", "1986-1987", "1987-1988", "1988-1989", "1989-1990", "1990-1991", "1991-1992", "1992-1993", "1993-1994", "1994-1995", "1995-1996", "1996-1997", "1997-1998", "1998-1999", "1999-2000", "2000-2001", "2001-2002", "2002-2003", "2003-2004", "2004-2005", "2005-2006", "2006-2007", "2007-2008", "2008-2009", "2009-2010", "2010-2011", "2011-2012", "2012-2013", "2013-2014", "2014-2015", "2015-2016", "2016-2017", "2017-2018", "2018-2019", "2019-2020", "2020-2021", "2021-2022", "2022-2023", "2023-2024", "2024-2025".



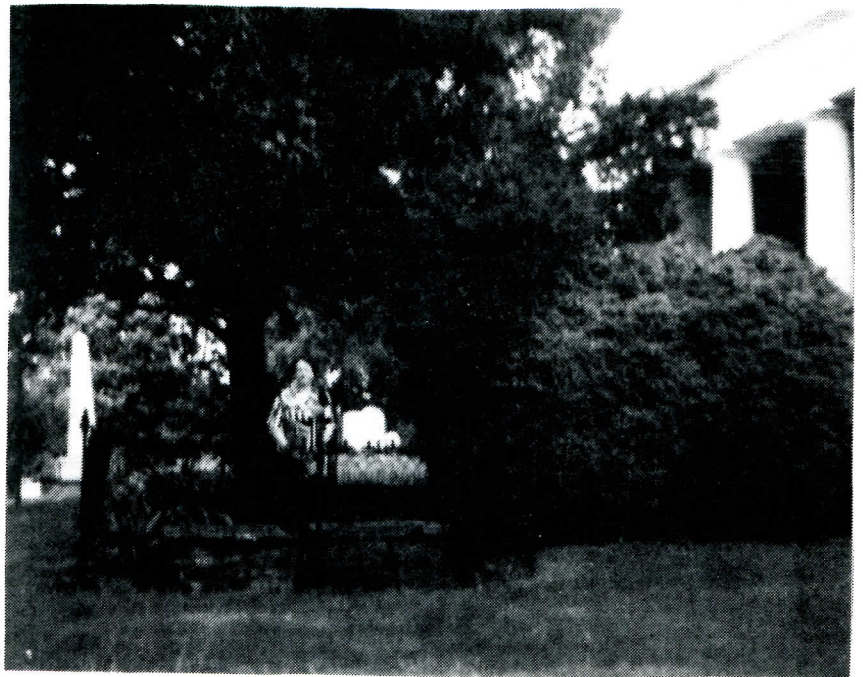




PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN FINCASTLE  
PREVIOUSLY THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH  
HENRY WAX, OUR REVOLUTIONARY  
WAR ANCESTOR IS BURIED HERE.

LOWER LEFT CORNER: GLORIA  
STANDING AT THE DAR MONUMENT  
IN MEMORY OF THE SOLDIERS OF  
REVOLUTIONARY WAR BURIED IN  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH YARD.

LOWER RIGHT CORNER: GRAVE  
ON LEFT IS THAT OF HENRY WAX  
AND THE GRAVE ON RIGHT IS HIS  
SECOND WIFE, CATHERINE KARNES





## CHAPTER EIGHT

## HENRY WAX

In June of 1993, I attended a Rice Family Reunion in Gainsville, Texas. While talking with a cousin he told me of a lady he knew that was kin to the Amyx family that did genealogy. Her name is Hallie Garner, from Dallas. As soon as I got home that Sunday night, I called her and talked about two hours. Hallie is responsible for telling me about the Seal, Green, Trent, and Henry Wax books. A lot of this information would not be available for me to write in this book, if it were not for her.

A letter to me from the author of the book, Henry Wax Family, follows:

Mrs Gloria West  
1204 Kingston Drive  
Yukon, OK 73099

Dear Gloria:

Received your order for Henry Wax and it was shipped today via UPS. You will probably receive it about the same time as this letter. The book was carefully boxed and should arrive in good condition. If not, please let me know.

I am pleased that you are interested in the WAX FAMILY history. The data we have collected comes from a wide variety of sources and has been screened very carefully. Even so, there are always areas where not all the family members have been documented. If you can offer either corrections or new information, it will be accepted as a welcome addition to our records.

I hope you get to enjoy your family history as much as I have enjoyed compiling it.

I am sorry for your misfortune on your trip East. Hopefully you may be able to come visit us another time.

Sincerely,

Ray Dewey

In Raymond Dewey's book he mentioned the fact that his primary goal was to compile and report the WAX history starting with the first arrivals in America. He feels the most probable initial history in America was found in Pennsylvania German Pioneers by Ralph Beaver Strassburger, 1966, Genealogical Publishing Co., Baltimore, MD

A List of men's names and ages imported in the Louisa, Capt. John Pitcarne, from Rotterdam and Cowes, the 3rd Oct 1753.



Philipus Wax	24	(list A)	Johann Philipus Wachs
(list B)	Johann Phillipus Wachs	(list C)	(lists show 77
registered adult males)			

Unanimously, most people believe Philip Wax was a part of our family. Only adult males are recorded on most ship lists and entry papers. Females and minors were not recorded. According to available family records, Philip, Peter, and Henry are all reported as having been born in Germany. Peter and Henry were not listed on the ship lists, so it is assumed they were minors. In 1753, Philip was age 24, Peter was 15, and Henry was 8. Circumstances suggest Peter was a brother to Philip and uncle to Henry.. On December 27, 1770 Philip Wax transferred 294 acres of land to "my son Henry".

Peter and Henry went together to Philadelphia to be naturalized. This is the earliest Henry Wax document that was found. It was dated April 10, 1767. On May 11, 1767, Henry was married to Margaret Geschwind, sister of Anna Christinia Geschwind who married Peter Wax. They are the daughters of Eberhard and Anna Margaret Yost Geschwind. Eberhard left Amsterdam on the Billinder Townsend. List 48A, Page 184. Qualified Oct 5, 1737 by taking oath to the government at Philadelphia, PA.

From Pennsylvania Archives, Second Series, Volume II:

In 1727 the Provincial Council of Pennsylvania enacted a ruling which required all immigrant foreigners (i.e. non-English) to subscribe to an Oath of Allegiance and an Oath of Abjuration. This applied to all adult males over age 16 and was required as a condition for entering the Pennsylvania Colony.

Later the Colony extended the ruling to require all adult male foreigners to become naturalized. This ruling applied to all who arrived as minors after 1727 and had not taken the Oaths upon arrival. It also required that they have lived in the colony for 7 years and have not been absent from the colony for more than two months at any time. On April 1767, the following took the Oath of Naturalization:

Name	Residence	Place Naturalized	Henry Wachs
Alsace Twp.	Philadelphia County, PA.	Peter Wachs	Bern Twp.
Philadelphia County, PA.			

(It is noted that they subscribed to the Declaration by affirmation in the manner of Quakers and other Protestants who conscientiously scruple to take the Oath.)

On December 27, 1770, Philip Wax, alias Wachs, alias Vaux conveyed 190 and 104 acres in Berks Co., PA. "to my son Henry Wax alias Wachs". This is the beginning of a long list of land and tax records in PA. from 1770 to April 6, 1786. In 1776 Henry served as a Sergeant in Capt. Daniel DeTurk's Company, Berks Co. Militia. Later on December 23, 1779 he received pay for service in Berks Co. militia, rank of Captain. September of 1784, Henry was commissioned Captain of Alsace Township Company, Berks Co. militia.<sup>9</sup>

---

<sup>9</sup>Henry Wax Family, pp. iv.

The Henry Wax family moved to Frederick County VA in 1786 and it is here that Catherine, Henry's daughter married Devault Boyer, father of Mary Boyer. It is not known for sure when Henry Wax moved to Fincastle, VA. However he bought 168 acres and several lots around Fincastle on December 8, 1789. Margaret Geschwind Wax died in Fincastle February 10, 1791, and Henry married Catherine (Keyser) Kern, May 10, 1791. In Robert Douthat Stoner's "Seedbed of the Republic", we find Henry Wax mentioned several times. On page 35 we find he was one of the Germans listed coming into Botetourt County.

In "Over the Mountain Men", by Anne Lowery Worrell, on page 51, we find Wax, Henry. Will proven 1797. Names wife, Catherine: and children, grand-children, and son-in-law. Will doesn't distinguish between these: Peter, John, Henry, Jacob, Mary, Christanne, Mandilson, Hannah, Hetty, and Susanna Wax. Mary Boyer, George Etter, Henry Price, and Margaret Hatsinpillar.

"A Seedbed of the Republic" gives reference to Henry Wax on pages 167, 214, and on page 250, we find this: "However, in a deed recorded July 11, 1815, in Deed Book 11, p. 569, between Henry Wax's Executors (Christian Harshbarger and Peter Noffsinger), and Benjamin Carper, in which a 33 and three fourths acre tract of the Wax estate, which included the mill and mill-pond, adjoining the Town of Fincastle; in the description of said tract it is stated that the line crosses the mill-pond with a line of the land George Hancock gave to General Clark, which places this Clark gift on the west side of Town Branch and south of Main Street, extended." So we see that at one time Henry Wax was owner of the mill of Fincastle.

The chapter "PROMINENT CITIZENS", pp.329-330, gives an interesting and pleasing profile on one of our most dazzling and important Colonial Grandfathers, one who was a Revolutionary War Soldier, Mill Owner, and prominent merchant, churchman, and citizen of Fincastle, Botetourt County, VA. It states: "THE WAXES (WACHS). Henry Wax was born in 1745 and moved from Alsace Township, Berks County, Pennsylvania, to Frederick County, VA. in 1786. Three years later he came to Botetourt county, purchasing 168 acres west of and adjoining the Town of Fincastle from Andrew Henry, a former owner of Miller's Mill property, now Fincastle. Wax later acquired extensive holdings immediately west of Fincastle, and elsewhere, and became one of the larger landowners of the County.

Henry Wax was twice married--first to Margaret Geschwind in Pennsylvania, May 11, 1767, by whom he had fourteen children; and later to Mrs. Catherine Keysor Kern (Karnes) by whom he had no issue, and to whom he left lands on the Greenbrier by his will. He died in 1796 leaving a will in which he mentions all of his children except one, Philip, who is supposed to have predeceased Henry. The hill immediately west of Fincastle, on the Sweet Springs Road, is still known locally as "Wax's Hill," and some of his descendants still live in Fincastle. His youngest daughter, Esther, was born after he came to Fincastle."

In the chapter "Some Early Botetourt Homes" there is a discussion about the AMMEN HOUSE. It follows as such: There was always a mill at Fincastle; in fact, Miller's Mill came even before Fincastle. In 1826, Benjamin Ammen purchased from his father-in-law, Thomas Cross, his mill located on the west side of the Town Branch, midway between the extension of Main and Back Streets. This land came through Benjamin Carper, Henry Wax, Andrew Henry and John Miller of Miller's Mill.



In Kegley's Virginia Frontier, a deed in 1799 is recorded which shows Henry Wax and Jeremiah Bell--330 acres on waters of Craig's Creek. October 4, 1792, Henry Wax--34 acres on the waters of Catawba. In "Botetourt County History Before 1900 Through County Cemetery Records" is a list of Revolutionary War Soldiers And Patriots who are interred in Fincastle Presbyterian Church Cemetery. It was researched by Mrs. Rowena Camden. Here I found my fifth great-grandfather, Henry Wax's grave. Henry Wax, Sr., 1796. Roy and I visited this church, cemetery, the pastor, and then I found Henry Wax's grave. His second wife is buried by him. There is a monument erected on the church grounds in honor of the Revolutionary Soldiers buried in this cemetery. Henry Wax's name is second to the last name on this monument. Will Book A Page 442 , Botetourt County, Virginia.

### Last Will And Testament Of Henry Wax

By the permission of Almighty God, I Henry Wax of the County of Botetourt and State of Virginia, being of sound and disposing mind and memory, do make and ordain this my last will and testament in manner following (that is to say):

First it is my will that all such debts as I shall justly owe, at the time of my decease, and my funeral charges and expenses be in the first place paid by my Executors herein after named; and as to my Estate both real and personal, I dispose thereof in manner following (that is to say). I give devise and bequeath unto my wife Catherine Wax and her heirs forever, two hundred and fifty five acres of land with all its appurtenances, lying and being in the county of Greenbriar, on Muddy Creek, which was granted to me under the lesser(?) Seal of the Commonwealth of Virginia, by patent bearing date the twentieth day of November in the year one thousand seven hundred and ninety two. All the rest of my estate whether real or personal, in possession, reversion, remainder or expectancy, I give and devise unto Nicholas Carper, Peter Moffsinger and Christian Harshbargin my Executors as herein after appointed and their heirs, to the uses upon the trust and for the intents and purposes herein after expressed and contained of and concerning the same; (that is to say) that my said Executors do make sale of all my said property hereby vested in them, in such manner and at such time as to them may seem most advantageous and advisable and the proceeds thereof (after paying all my just debts) to divide equally and share and share alike amongst my following children, sons in law and grandchild, Viz.: George Etter, Peter Wax, John Wax, Henry Wax, Jacob Wax, Henry Price, Mary Wax, Christiana Wax, Margaret Hatsinnnpiller, Mandeline Wax, Hannah Wax, Hetty Wax, Susannah Wax, and Mary Boyer my granddaughter.

It is my will and desire and I do hereby direct and appoint that my said Executors shall have the guardianship and tuition of such of my children as are minors at the time of my decease; and that they make such appropriation or use of their share of my estate during such minority for the purposes aforesaid, as they in their discretion may deem most advantageous and advisable. And I do hereby make, nominate, and appoint my friends Nicholas Carper, Peter Noffsinger, and Christian Harshbargan my Executors of this my last will and testament hereby revoking all former wills by me made and do declare this only to be my last will and testament. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty fifth day of October in the year of Christ one thousand seven hundred and ninety six.

Heinrich Wachs

(Signature in German script)

Published and declared in the presence of:

Jacob Carper  
 Williston Talbott  
 Jacob Hotzenpiller  
 Michael Book

At Botetourt County Court 1797.

This last will and testament of Henry Wax deceased was exhibited into Court and proved by the oaths of Michael Book and Jacob Carper two of the subscribing witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded and on the motion of Nicholas Carper, Christian Harshbargin and Peter Noffsinger the Executors therein named who having first made oath entered into and acknowledged bond with security according to law certificate is granted them for abstaining a probate thereof or other form.  
 test: T. Boner

I do not intend to give all of Henry Wax's children's children. My desire is to only give our immediate pedigree from Henry Wax to William Harvy Amyx.

Henry Wax (Wache, Wachs, Vach) was born in 1745, probably in Germany. He died November 6, 1796, and married May 11, 1767 to Margaret Geschwind, who died in Fincastle, February 10, 1791. She was the daughter of Eberhard and Anna Margaret Yost Geschwind. They had fourteen children which are:

- A. Peter Wax, born Feb. 13, 1768 in Oley, PA. He died April 18, 1804 in Fincastle, VA. He married Margaret Allis, born ca 1772, died August 1841.
- B. Catherine Wax, born February 20, 1769 in Oley, Berks County, PA. and died in Hawkins County, TN. in 1847-9. She married Devault Boyer first; but no record of this union. Catherine is the child of Henry Wax from which we descend. Catherine and Devault had:
  - a. Mary Boyer who married Isaac Amyx. (Our lineage). Catherine then married Henry Price, Sr., August 14, 1787. They had the following children:
  - b. Elizabeth Price, born November 7, 1789 at VA. Died 1861. buried in Carpenter Cemetery, Hawkins County, TN. Married William Altom, born 1789, died 1857.
  - c. Henry Price, Jr., born 1795-8, at Fincastle, VA. Died August 1869 at Hawkins County, TN. Married 1826 to Nancy Davis, born 1808, died 1830. Daughter of James and Anne Everett Davis. Second wife, Elizabeth Kyle.
  - d. Susannah Parice, born Oct 5, 1798 at Fincastle, VA/W.VA., died 1854, buried in Wm. Brooks Cemetery, Hawkins Co. TN.



- e. Hannah Price, born August 8, 1799 at Fincastle, VA. and died June 14, 1876 in Hawkins County, TN. Married ca 1822 to Anthony Brooks, born June 4, 1801, died March 1856.
  - f. Jacob Price, born ca 1800 in Botetourt Co. VA, died February 24, 1870 and buried in Price Cemetery on the Davis Farm in Choptack, Hawkins Co. TN. Married ca 1826 to Mary "Polly Webb, born April 4, 1809, died April 1, 1892. Daughter of Theodric Jr., and Catherine Maddox Webb.
  - g. George Price, born 1809, died February 1870. Married November 9, 1833 to Suzannah Webb. She was born 1815-9 and died 1881.
  - h. Isaac Price, born July 25, 1806 at Botetourt Co. VA, and died January 27, 1873. Buried in the Troy Price Farm, Choptack, Hawkins Co. TN. Married Martha Ann "Patsy" Webb, born 1815 and died 1883. Parents were Theodoric Webb and Catherine Maddox Webb.
  - i. Maggie Price, married William Carver.
- C. Margaret Wax, born April 16, 1770 in Oley, Alsace Twp. Berks County, Pa. Died May 28, 1839 at Greenbrier co. W. VA. Married October 18, 1788 to Benjamin Hutsinpiller born 1768, and died September 5, 1854. Son of Jacob and Elizabeth Hutsinpiller.
  - D. Philip Wax, born October 20, 1771 in Alsace, Berks County, PA. Nothing else known.
  - E. Elizabeth Wax, born November 17, 1772 in Berks County, PA. Died December 10, 1810 in Hawkins County, TN. Married March 9, 1791, to George H. Etter, II. He was born August 27, 1842 at Hawkins County, TN. Parents were George H. Sr., and Christina \_\_\_\_?
  - F. Henry Wax, Jr., born August 1, 1774 in Berks County, PA. Died February 10, 1842. Married Catherine Book, born December 5, 1784 in Fincastle, VA. Died June 18, 1858 in Botetourt County, VA. Parents Michael and Mary----?Book.
  - G. Maria Mary, born February 12, 1776 in Berks County, PA. and died August 6, 1857. Buried St. Mary's Catholic Cemetery Wytheville, VA. Married April 9, 1795 to Jacob Friedrich Seagle, born February 2, 1771 at York County PA. He died November 23, 1822 and is buried at St. John's Lutheran Church, Wytheville, VA. Parents were George Friederick and (m/3) Maria Magdalena Kohler Seagle.
  - H. Christina/Christiana Wax, born December 15, 1777 at Berks County, PA. Married April 1798 to James Kemper/Camper, born 1762, and died 1826.

- I. John Wax, born November 15, 1779 at Alsace, Berks County, PA. Nothing else known.
- J. Magdalina Wax, Madelin, or Mollie, born September 15, 1781 at Alsace, Berks County, PA. and died March 12, 1840. Married January 27, 1799 to Abraham Hutsinpillar, born October 8, 1872 at Hampshire County, VA. Parents were Jacob and Elizabeth -----?Hutsinpillar.
- K. Susannah Wax, born July 14, 1783 in Alsace, Berks County, PA. Died February 14, 1851 in Hawkins County, TN., or Elkins, Washington County, AR. Married November 25, 1801 to Reverend Daniel Howry. All that is known.
- L. Hannah Wax, born March 26, 1785 at Alsace, Berks County, PA, and died February 1836 at Franklin County AR. Married July 20, 1801 to George Karnes Jr., born January 10, 1780 at Botetourt County, VA. Died August 26, 1835. Son of George and Elizabeth-----?Karnes.
- M. Jacob Wax, born July 8, 1787 at Winchester, Frederick County, VA. Died July 13, 1865 at Fayetteville, WA. County, AR. Buried on homestead. Married July 15, 1817 at Rockbridge Co. VA. to Susan Elizabeth Galbreath, born 1792 and died 1873. Parents were Wm. and Ellen Galbreath from England.
- N. Esther (Hetty ) Wax, born December 26, 1790 in Botetourt County, VA. Died 1872 in Greenbrier, W.VA..

By tracing your pedigree back to Henry Wax and having all the documents from each generation, you may qualify to join the D.A.R. or the S.A.R. This book should be helpful with the other references I have enclosed.



ROGERSVILLE, HAWKINS COUNTY, TENN.



THIS IS WHERE I FOUND MY WINSTEAD FAMILY. I  
WROTE A STORY FOR "HAWKINS COUNTY FAMILIES" AND  
PEGGY COOK, EDITOR AND COURT CLERK WROTE TO ME  
AND GOT ME INFORMATION ON THE WINSTEAD FAMILY,  
PIONEERS AND EARLY DAY SETTLERS IN HAWKINS COUNTY.

## CHAPTER NINE

### WINSTEAD FAMILY

There is always a lot of luck, help, and hard work doing research in genealogy. Also, there has been a lot of praying on my part. When I started trying to research the Winstead family, I just ran into a brick wall, so to speak! During the Civil War a lot of records were burned, lost, or stolen by the Union Army. Many of the fine Colonial Courthouses were destroyed, along with personal records, possessions, homes, lives, and pride. The North really hindered a lot of our chances from ever finding out who a lot of our ancestors were, what they did, and where they came from and where they went.

Just this year, 1994, did I have any success in finding any of our Winstead and Pearson families and their records. However, it was not until I researched and scoured every past genealogical magazine that I could. The Regent of the D.A.R. Society in Yukon loaned these books to me to research. I found both the Pearson and Winstead Family's information and wrote letters to the associations for these families.

About the time that I wrote the Winstead Family representative, I received a letter from a "Peggy Cook" in Rogersville, TN. I had written a story for the book, Hawkins County and It's Families. The editor of this book was Peggy Cook. I had written Hawkins County Library asking for help with the Pearsons and the Winsteds. The librarian gave my letter to Peggy Cook. So, following is a letter from Peggy to me:

Ms. West:

I am a Winstead, have worked many years on this line. Matthew is a son of Francis Winstead. You really don't say what you want on this family. I have much in the upcoming book of Hawkins County and It's Families. I believe you have purchased a book. I know you submitted a story on the Pearsons. What county is Egypt, KY in? I would like to help someone into the D. A. R. on this Francis line.

Sincerely,

Peggy Cook Court Recorder

Needless to say I was exhilarated! Peggy Cook was a world of help. I called her and she gave me the name of a cousin who happened to be the Representative of the Winstead Association. I contacted Martha Winstead, from South Bend, Indiana and zeroed in with a wealth of information. We exchanged information, and I wrote Earl Cole and Edna Jones and we all got our heads together and worked up all of our line of Winsteds and sent to Martha. Following is a letter from Martha:

February 17, 1994.

Dear Gloria:



Boy, was I glad to get your call today. But I have a notion you've already figured that out for yourself. I haven't stopped to try to find Francis' Revolutionary War Pension application but I won't forget to do it soon! I'm sending you the following:

The Earlier Winstons/Winstones/Winsteads which we talked a little about today. As we said, your line comes through Francis, the 11th child of Samuel, born 1758, called B branch. I came through Samuel Born 1723, the #3 branch. It's the #4 branch Joseph, that we're just revised and are now getting it bound. If people want it unbound, they can still get that. For several years now, we've just sent any of the lines for 10 cents a page, plus postage. But don't you try to pay me for this stuff I'm sending you because that's coming so we can try to work out Matthew's line together.

The pages I've enclosed are from the June 1993 edition of the B branch. Pages 1 - 6 will show you the overall line from Francis and his kids. As I said, Peggy Cook convinced me that her William, born 1797 was the first child of Ezekiel Hill instead of the last child of Francis. I thought it was the latter, but I consider Peggy the best authority for the B branch.

Matthew starts with page 148 and you can see where I put 7 kids. William P. was listed on one of the membership rosters of Hickory Cove Baptist Church in Hawkins County, which Francis organized. There's an LDS film with the minutes of that church. If you're interested I can look that film # up. It's kinda hard to read because it looks brownish instead of black and white.

Louis and David were names on the 1836 tax records for Hawkins County which Peggy told me about. I have no real proof. They lived near Matthew, that's all. All the rest of the pages cover all I have on Matthew's kids as listed on page 148. I'll be happy to get anything you/or Earl Cole disagree with and/or corrections or additions. I'd love to read Earl's letter to see what I can digest from it.

I'm enclosing a copy of the newsletter from September 1993 which has a little news of the 1993 reunion. I'll get them to send you a copy of the March and April 1994 newsletter. If you don't get it by early April, let me know and I'll send you a copy of mine. If you want to join the reunion (hope you will) just send me \$5.00 for a year.

Guess what? I was so excited over finding you (I thought I found her) that I noticed I didn't get your phone #. Please send it to me. I do most of my work by phone.

This ought to be enough to get you started with a comparison of what we have and what you have. Let's do it! Maybe there are others who will come forward after we get it going.

Sincerely,

Martha

PS--Feel free to send copies of any of this stuff to Earl or anybody else who might be able to help us.

Well, I didn't know if Earl or Edna would help me, but I knew Earl wanted to help find out more on the Winsteads, so I took a chance, and sure enough, he helped tremendously. My sincere gratitude to

Earl for many letters, charts, and lots of information he has been so generous to give me! I believe the feeling is mutual as I was responsible for us finding out more on the Winsteads.

### THE EARLIER WINSTONS/WINSTONES/WINSTEADS

First clues of the Winstead ancestry came from the Northumberland County (VA) Order book for years 1678-1698, see p. 544, when Samuel had his land surveyed and sold it. Samuel's mother had remarried a Northumberland man after Samuel's father died in 1672. The earlier records were written WINSTON and occasionally WINSTONE.

Samuel's father, Daniel, was traced through English records to Yapton, in Sussex Parish. WILLSON was used as an alias for Winston, especially to identify a male when his spouse was an heiress. Other examples were men who had inherited maternal estates.

The people who are doing research on the Winstead family now have copies of the wills of Daniel's great grandfather, John; his uncle, Thomas; and his grandmother, Ann. With these documents they were able to deduce some facts about the Winston family in the mid-1600's. There were a number of Richard Winstons in the Yapton area, and our ancestor was the eldest son of the John Winston who died in Yapton on September 30, 1585 and who was mentioned in the latter's will.

In those days males were required to sign the Protestation Return and, fortunately, some of these still exist. On the 1641 list for Yapton, Daniel's father, also names Daniel, and the older Daniel's brother, Ambrose, appeared side-by-side. Their brother Thomas also resided in Yapton.

Our Daniel was baptized on June 6, 1647, in St. Peter-the Great Parish at Chichester, 10 miles west of Yapton. Maybe a family move took Daniel to Chichester, or perhaps he enrolled there in a tailor's apprenticeship program. This is an obvious conclusion, as Daniel's uncle was a tailor also, according to his will.

To the best of our knowledge, no wills have ever been found for William or Ambrose, so it cannot be determined if all males in the family were tailors. Guild records are not extant for Chichester for the 1600's and it was not possible to verify that Daniel Winston apprenticed there. Daniel would have turned 21 in the late 1600's. He was in court records in Lancaster County, VA by 1671. By then he was a tailor.

Daniel's only child appears to have been Samuel Winston/Winstead, born about 1671. He and his parents lived on Marratico Creek in Lancaster County, which later became part of the Commonwealth of Virginia. About this same time, Daniel bought 50 acres of land from one Brian Stott. This purchase adjoined land owned by Daniel's neighbor, John Simpson. Daniel died soon thereafter and Samuel's mother, Elizabeth, became administrator of the estate. Simpson and another neighbor, Stephen Tomlyn, acted as securities for the estate, and Simpson also became Samuel's guardian.

When Elizabeth remarried in 1673, young Samuel got a stepfather, Tymothy Green of Northumberland County, and Tymothy's promise, made to Simpson, that the boy would receive 150 acres of land, a young mare, two young cows, a heifer, a calf, an iron pot, rug, and a feather bed, complete with bolsters and blanket. This arrangement was unusual in that Tymothy already had a son, Timothy Green,



Jr., born in 1671, who would inherit all of his father's land except the usual one-third dower the wife got. Timothy made a gift deed for Samuel's 150 acres in 1674.

Timothy and Elizabeth had their first son, Farnfold Green, in 1674. Two years later their second son, Titus, was born. Timothy died in 1677 and Elizabeth, now twice a widow, was again administrator of the estate. Samuel now received the other things promised him. the livestock and other items of personal property.

In 1690, at about 19 years of age, Samuel surveyed his land. Then he reconveyed to Brian Stott the 50 Acres of land purchased from Stott, "it being the same land that formerly belonged to Daniel Winston."

Elizabeth's third marriage was to Gilbert Harrold, a widower with three small children. In that household, at the time of their marriage in 1682, were these children:

Timothy Green, age 11; Samuel Winston, age 11, Farnfold Green, age 8; Titus Green, age 7; James Harrold, age 3; Mary Harrold, age 2, and Gilbert Harrold, newborn.

#### REFERENCES:

1. Will of John Winston, 1585, Archdeaconry Court of Chichester, Sussex 13:264. FHL film, 194565.
2. Will of Thomas Winston, 1641, Archdeaconry Court of Chichester, Sussex, pp8. FHL film, 194581.
3. Will of Ann Winston of Yapton, Sussex, 1641, Archdeaconry Court of Chichester, pp.9. FHL film, 194581
4. Lancaster county (VA) Orders 3A, p. 117.
5. Lancaster County (VA) Orders 3A, p. 227.
6. Northumberland County (VA) Order Book 1666-78, p. 154.
7. Northumberland County (VA) Order Book 1678-98, p.544.
8. St. Stephens Parish Register, Northumberland County Births, 1661-1810. Virginia Colonial Abstracts by Beverley Fleet.
9. Northumberland County (VA) Order Book 1678-78, p.147.
10. Northumberland County (VA) Order Book 1678-98, p.544.
11. Lancaster county (VA) Deed Book 7, p.57.
12. Northumberland County (VA) Order Book, 1678-98, p.135.

The compilation that follows originally was made up using Samuel, born 1701 as the progenitor of the Winsteads and he was assigned #1. This had already been done when Samuel, born 1671 was found to have been born in Virginia. The latter has been assigned #0, and only one child is known to have been produced by this couple.

#### WINSTEAD LINEAGE

Samuel Winstead, Winston/Winstone, born ca. 1671, Lancaster Co. VA., died November 16, 1726, Northumberland County, VA. Samuel married Elizabeth, who died before 1726 in Northumberland Co. VA.

1. Samuel Winstead, Jr., born 1701, Northumberland Co. VA, was appointed constable of Metapony by the County Court, May 19, 1697. Sources cited: St. Stephens Parish Register, Northumberland County (VA) Births, 1661-1810. Will of Samuel Winstead, Northumberland County (VA) Record Book. Northumberland County VA. Orders, p.770.
2. Samuel Winstead, Jr., born October 25, 1701, Northumberland Co. VA., died 1773-4. Will probated March 14, 1774, and he was buried in Northumberland Co. VA. Married 1st, Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_, ca 1719, Northumberland Co. Virginia. Died before 1723 in Northumberland Co. VA. Married 2nd, \_\_\_\_\_ ca. 1722, Northumberland Co. VA. Born before 1705, VA., died after 1723, Northumberland Co. VA. Married 3rd, \_\_\_\_\_, ca. 1729, Northumberland Co. VA., died 1761, Northumberland Co. VA. Married 4th Winefred \_\_\_\_\_, ca. 1757, Northumberland Co. VA., born before 1742, VA., died in Northumberland Co. VA. Children:
  - A. Elizabeth Winstead, born June 23, 1720, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - B. Daniel Winstead, born 1721, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - C. Samuel Winstead III, born 1723, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - D. Joseph Winstead, born 1725-30, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - E. George Winstead, born 1733, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - F. Susannah Winstead, born 1736, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - G. Peter Winstead, born 1739, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - H. Richard Winstead, born 1740-54, Northumberland Co. VA.
  - I. Jeremiah Winstead, born 1752, Northumberland Co. VA.



K. Winefred Winstead, born May 3, 1762, Northumberland Co. VA.

L. Thomas Winstead, born 1764, Northumberland Co. VA.

M. David Winstead, born 1770, Northumberland Co. VA.

N. Hannah Winstead, born March 19, 1772, Northumberland Co. VA.

Samuel acted as executor of his father's estate and received the plantation and most of the residue. Census: 1782 VA. Northumberland Co. St. Stephens Parish, p. 39, (Winefred) Birth dates from St. Stephens Parish Register, Northumberland County Births, 1661-1810. Virginia Colonial Abstracts by Beverley Fleet.

Samuel Winstead: Born October 25, 1701, Northumberland Co. VA. Will probated, 1774.

(Some of this information had previously been given to me by Earl Cole).

#### FRANCIS WINSTEAD

Francis was born November 19, 1758, in Northumberland Co. VA. He died October of 1842 in Hawkins Co. TN. He married Catherine-----, ca 1774 in Northumberland Co. VA. They had the following children:

A. Ezekiel Hill, born 1775, VA.

B. Sally Winstead, born June 21, 1778 in Northumberland Co. VA. (St. Stephens Parish Register of Births)

C. Francis Winstead, born 1780, Northumberland Co. VA.

D. Matthew Winstead, born 1784, VA. (Our Line).

E. Ephraim Winstead, born 1780-90, VA.

Francis volunteered for military service in the fall of 1776. He served at various times as First Sergeant under Captains John Crawley and George Eskridge in the Virginia line. He was stationed mostly at Cherry Point on the Potomac River and made frequent visits to his home nearby. He served until sometime in 1782 and was allowed a Revolutionary pension on his application from Hawkins Co. TN. on August 20, 1832. At the time he declared his occupation as a Baptist minister. Francis was named in his father's will, probated on March 14, 1774, Northumberland Co. VA. He was co-security on administration of Henry Vanlandingham's estate, September 13, 1790. He also acted as security on administration of the estate of Mary Beland, Oct. 10, 1791.

Peggy Cook sent me the following information:

Francis Winstead: Born November 19, 1758. St. Stephens Parish, Northumberland Co. VA. Died in Hawkins Co. TN. Will written September 20, 1841. Probated November 7, 1841. Will Book I-493, Hawkins Co. TN. Baptist Minister, Rev. War soldier, pensioned as a Minuteman, Pension No. 25567. Lived in Northumberland Co. VA, Edgecombe Co. NC, and Hawkins Co. TN. He married Catherine\_\_\_\_\_? Listed on 1784 tax list and 1790 census of Northumberland Co. VA. In 1800 in census of Edgecombe Co. NC. in 1793 and about 12 years later removed to Hawkins Co. TN. On the 1809 and 1810 tax list of Hawkins. Co. TN. with 400 acres and one white poll. On the 1830 census of HAWKINS. Co. TN. he is in the household of his son Ephraim Winstead. There are no census records for East TN until 1830 and only a few tax lists. The will of Samuel Winstead, Francis's father was probated in 1774, at the time that Francis was 15 years old with brothers and sisters (whole) ranging in ages from 11 down to 1.

Francis and his mother Winnefret and his half brother Samuel are the only ones mentioned by name. Perhaps the others were considered too young and the half brothers and sisters too old and long out on their own, or just omitted other than "MY FORMER CHILDREN".

In his pension statement Francis tells the family Bible was sold at the sale after his father's death. On November 1, 1783, when Francis was 25 years old, his mother turned over to him, the management and control of the plantation, and 10 years later in 1793, Francis sold the plantation and moved to NC. His mother either married again or died in this ten year period. (I believe she remarried). The documents recording these sales are on file in the old order books of Northumberland Co. VA. Record Book 14--pp. 679-80. Record Book 12--p. 119. Francis Winstead only had five deed transactions in Edgecombe Co. NC including selling out in 1805.

The records of the church of Falls of the Tar River and the Upper Town Creek Baptist Church Histories of Nash and Edgecombe Co. NC exist in several xerox copies. Francis was ordained September of 1802 at the Falls of Tar River Baptist Church. In the Tar River minutes, Elder Winstead was called to the Upper Town Creek pastorate on January 15, 1803. That was about two weeks after the formal constituting of the new Church body.

On the roll of members of the Falls of Tar River Church, Francis Winstead was No. 237, Caty, No. 288, Ezekiel, No. 268, and Mourning, was No. 284. Francis Winstead was pastor of Upper Town Creek Church from 1803 until August 21, 1805, when Elder Nathan Gilbert became pastor. On April 21, 1807, he bought two hundred acres from John Thompson in Hawkins Co. TN. in the Big Poor Valley opposite the little War Gap.

Deed Book 6-p. 97 shows he made an improvement, but on February 25, 1811, he sold this land back to John Thompson. The 400 acres he paid tax on I have not found in our incomplete records. He appears in the records of the Holston Baptist Association in 1809, at the Big Creek Church. He became pastor of the Richardson's Creek Church in 1812. He was pastor there until he founded the Hickory Cove Baptist Church in 1820. Was the pastor of Hickory Cove for nine years.

Data from census records, deeds, wills, church records, and pension papers. Have copies.

Peggy Cook



Tax list 1784 Northumberland Co. VA. 11 white people, 2 dwellings, 2 slaves.

Census, 1790, Northumberland Co. VA. 5 white people, 1 slave.

Census 1800 Edgecombe Co. NC. 1 male 10-16, 2 males 18-26, 2 females 0-10. 1 female 10-16.

Tax list 1809 Hawkins Co. TN. Winstead, Francis 400 acres, 1 white poll Winstead, Ezekiel 1 white poll

On the 1810 tax list of Hawkins Co. TN.

Census of 1830 HAWKINS. Co. TN. in the house of Ephraim Winstead.

Martha Winstead was so kind to send me a copy of Francis Winstead's will dated September 20, 1841, and proven November 7, 1842:

In the name of God, Amen.

I, Francis Winstead of the County of Hawkins in the State of Tennessee being weak of body but of sound mind and memory, knowing the uncertainty of life and the certainty of death, do make and ordain this my last will and testament. That is to say, I do recommend my soul to Almighty God who gave it, and desire that my mortal body shall be decently committed to the earth, with the usual Christian rites, according to the discretion of my executors hereinafter to be named. And as to the worldly estate or property it hath pleased Almighty God to Bless me with, I dispose of it in the following manner, to wit:

I give and bequeath unto my beloved daughter-in-law Margaret Winstead, widow of my son Ephraim Winstead, deceased late of said county and state, all my estate or property of every description now owned by me, or which may be hereafter owned by me, to be at her absolute disposal and control forever, in consideration of my love and affection for her, and also in consideration and love and affection she has always bestowed upon me. And I am only sorry that I have not more to give her to remunerate her for her kindness and attention shown to me by her in my old age.

And it is my desire and I do request it and ordain that the said daughter-in-law, Margaret Winstead, together with my grandson James Winstead, shall be my executor and Executrix to this my last will and testament. And I do hereby request that the County Court shall qualify them as such, without requiring them bond and security having full confidence that they will discharge their duties, and discharge any witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 20th day of September 1842.

Signed, sealed and published  
in the presence of us as the  
last will of Francis Winstead  
by him.

Francis Winstead      SEAL

Jesse Cope  
Paschal Martin

## MATHEW WINSTEAD

Matthew was born July 13, 1784, in Northumberland Co. VA. He died in 1850-60, in Hawkins County, TN. He married Elizabeth\_\_\_\_\_, born 1784, in North Carolina, and died 1850-60 in Hawkins Co., TN. They had the following children:

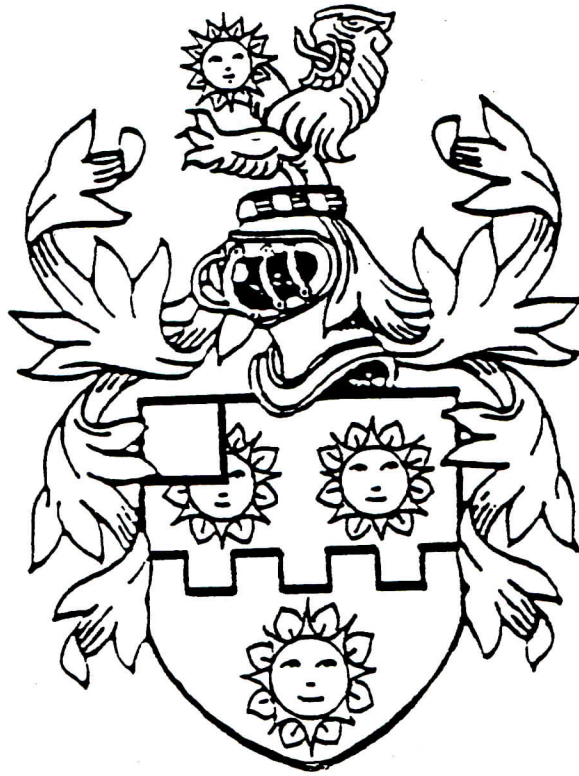
- A. Elizabeth Winstead, born 1806, North Carolina
- B. William P. Winstead, born 1807, North Carolina
- C. Mary Winstead, born 1810, TN., and died in 1891 in Jackson Co. KY. (Our line).
- D. Louis Winstead, born 1810, in TN.
- E. David Winstead, born 1812, TN.
- F. Wriley Winstead, born 1818, TN.
- G. Nancy Jane Winstead, born 1820-25. TN, Census-1810. NC, Edgecombe Co. 1830. TN, Hawkins Co. p. 66. 1840 TN Hawkins Co. 1850 TN Hawkins Co. p.617.

## MARY WINSTEAD

Mary Winstead Amyx, born 1810 in Hawkins Co. TN, died 1891 in Jackson Co. KY. She married Samuel Amyx, born 1804 in Hawkins Co. TN, son of Isaac Amyx and Mary Polly Boyer Amyx. Samuel died 1888 in Jackson Co. KY. They are buried in the Egypt Cemetery on a beautiful hill over-looking the Egypt Baptist Church. Their records can be found in Tyner, KY. I was privileged to be able to visit this place and my third cousins in 1993. I am not going to list their children again, because they are listed in chapter five under Samuel Amyx. I believe Mary Winstead was more English than Dutch, as some claim!

Note: If records can be found, DAR and SAR membership may be attained through Francis Winstead's Revolutionary War Service.





Pearson

## CHAPTER TEN

## PEARSON FAMILY

As I mentioned previously, only through prayer and following hunches, and taking what little information I had gleaned through letters from different cousins, did I put together the families of our Pearson Ancestors.

There is much conflicting data and confusion as to who we actually came from. There are two brothers that came over from England that different cousins say we descend from. Following is a letter from Earl Cole. I have found his records to be pretty reliable. However, until I have the documents to prove which brother we originated from, I shall put both their histories in this book. Maybe at a later date, I will be able to find out who our Pennsylvania immigrant grandsire was.

Dear Gloria:

Thank you very much for the Amyx data. There is some new information that I did not have. Thank you for the copy of Isaac Amyx's and Polly Boyer marriage record. I do not have anything on Riley Samuel Amyx's military records. I always thought that he was in the Confederate Army from TN. But Mr. H. W. Amyx of Sneedville, TN. told me that the Amyx's moved to Jackson County KY., and that he had a copy of Riley's discharge. So H.W. Amyx sent me a copy of Riley's discharge back in the 1980's. H.W. Amyx died about 1986, age 84.

I am enclosing a copy of Riley's discharge paper and a copy of his pension application where he listed his children's birth dates.

From a history of Botetourt County, VA. the Waxes (Wachs) Henry Wax, was born in 1745 and moved from Alsace Township, Berks County, PA. to Frederick Co. VA. in 1786. In 1789 he came to Botetourt County and purchased 168 acres west of and adjoining the town of Fincastle from Andrew Henry. (Henry Wax also owned a tavern and inn in Fincastle.)

Henry Wax was married twice, first to Margaret Geschwind in PA. May 11, 1767 by whom he had 14 children and later to Mrs Catharine Karnes by whom he had no issue. He died 1796 leaving a will in which he mentioned all of his children except one, Philip who is supposed to have predeceased Henry. His youngest daughter Esther, was born after he came to Fincastle.

Now I can't find my Price data right now, but I remember Henry Price married Catharine Wax in Frederick County VA, about 1787. Mary Wax Boyer was born about 1783 in PA. Amyx data family tradition, etc., says she was a Price, but it is not true. She was a Boyer, daughter of Devault Boyer and Catharine Wax.

Henry Wax's wife was Margaret Geschwind, born about 1750, PA., died February 10, 1791 in VA. Her father was Eberhard Geschwind who came to this country in October 1737. His name was spelled GESWINT and he signed his name with an X. From memory I think Eberhard's wife's name was Anna



Margaret Yost. She died about 1791, Berks County PA., leaving a will mentioning a daughter, Margaret Wax.

From the ship list of passengers 1737, Henry Wax's father may have been Philipus Wax (Wachs), or Johan Phillipus Wachs. (Our ancestor Isaac Amyx and Mary "Polly" Boyer Amyx).

Now our ancestor Samuel Amyx was probably the oldest of Isaac and Mary's children. He was born about 1804, probably in VA. Died 1888 in Jackson County KY. He is buried in the family cemetery in Jackson County KY., Egypt Cemetery, Egypt, KY. Samuel married #1, Fanny Mendenhall Kenner and divorced September 1828. They had one child, a son. I have her name somewhere. She ran away to KY, taking a son. Later Samuel married a widow Mary "Polly" Winstead Pace. She was born 1810 in NC. Did POLLY PACE and husband have any children: As per 1850 census Lucinda Amyx was the oldest daughter child born 1833.

1830 Census Hawkins County, TN., paragraph 66, Isaac Amyx, 10001001-1212101.

Isaac Amyx and wife, Mary Boyer only had one son and eight daughters. I need to check more on this. Looks like Samuel and Son and wife living with Isaac. Mary Winstead who Married #2, Samuel Amyx, was probably the daughter of Matthew and Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_ Winstead, no proof!

Now here is our PEARSON line from Christian on back!

#1. Christian Pearson, born about 1755 in Bucks County PA. married Catharine \_\_\_\_\_.  
He was the son of:

#2. Lawrence Pearson and his wife Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_. Lawrence Pearson born 1732, died 1803, will proved in Bucks County PA. , was dated Spetember 5, 1801.

#3. Lawrence was a grandson of Lawrence Pearson (Bearson), #1, and his wife Ann \_\_\_\_\_, and probable son of Joseph Pearson who was born in Bucks County PA. about 1712.

#4. Joseph Pearson born 1712, was a son of Lawrence Pearson and his wife Ann \_\_\_\_\_.  
Lawrence Pearson wrote his will on 27th of July 1752. He was born 1688 and died 1756.

#5. Lawrence Pearson, 1688 - 1756, was the son of Thomas Pearson and his wife Margery Smith, who came to PA. in 1683 from England. He was supposed to have come to PA. with William Penn on the ship "WELCOME". It landed at Upland, PA., October 27, 1682.

#6. Thomas Pearson was the son of the first Lawrence Pearson and his wife Elizabeth Janney (Gyney).  
Lawrence Pearson was born 1600, died 1673.

I will close for now so I can get this in the mail. Write me again soon.

Sincerely,

Earl E. Cole

With this tidbit of information about the PEARSONS, the search began to locate more documents, history, and related Pearson families. It took me about a year. Finally Bettina Burns of Cullman, AL. was located. She had written three books on all the Pearsons, Piersons, Peersons, Bearsons, etc. I bought one of her books and found other related families. I began calling these people and finally was able to put together our PEARSON FAMILY HERITAGE.

### THE FAMILY OF REVEREND LAWRENCE/JOHN PIERSON

In the book Clues to Our Family Names<sup>10</sup> by Lou Stein, we find that the Pearson name is an English name meaning 'son of Pierre' or "son of peer". The root word Peter is from the Greek word petros meaning "one who is solid as a rock" Peter came to England from western France as Pierre. By 1100 A.D. the Anglo-Saxons could only spell and say Pier (peer). By 1200 A.D. Peer and Piers were spelled and pronounced Peter and Peters. The Anglo-Saxons also had difficulty pronouncing St. Pierre (Peter) in French; they said it as Semper (St. Pierre). By 1260 A.D. the French name of "son of Pierre" became pronounced Piers, Pierce, and Pierson. So originally the Pearson name could have been French.

Because of the evolutionary nature of name development, it is virtually impossible to pinpoint a single origin of any surname. In fact, the name Pearson probably evolved separately from Scandinavia, England and France. The only way to know for sure what your nationality is, is to trace them in Europe, a family at a time. If your family can be traced to England, you may be able to trace back to the 1300's where Pearsons are on record in Warwickshire, England. In the early days the Pearsons were Catholics as was all of England. When Henry VIII established the new religion they were hard to move from their old faith, but gradually those of Cheshire and Lancaster went over to the new Church of England while those of York still clung to Rome. Many of those Pearsons became members of the "Order of Friends". The early Pearson immigrants to Pennsylvania were Quakers while the Pearsons who settled in New England were churchmen. The western branches were inclined to Methodism.

George Pearson, from his book The Descendants of Benjamin and Esther Furnas Pearson states: "The early Pearson immigrants to America were tall, medium to large frame and bony; they all had brown hair, blue or gray eyes and ruddy complexions. A stout Pearson was almost unknown."

Richard Foster Pearson, in his quarterly, Pearsons, Places and Things, did research on all of the important people that descended from the Pearson families. They are as follows: James Pearson, died 1805, was a glass painter who introduced some improvements into coloring glass. William Pearson, 1767-1847, was an astronomer who was largely instrumental in founding the London Astronomical Society, in 1820. The numbers of famous people who have descended from Pearson lines is endless; among them are former Presidents of the United States, Herbert Clark Hoover, Franklin Pierce, and Richard Milhouse Nixon.

Reverend Lawrence Pierson (Pearson) was born May 4, 1601 in Chester County, Pownall Fee, England. He died December 26, 1673, and is buried in the "Friends" Burying Ground Mobberly, Chester, England. He married Elizabeth Janney/Gyney ca 1645. She was born ca. 1602, and died August 13, 1662. Her father was Randall Janney, born February 23, 1579/80, and her mother was Ellen Allrod, born

---

<sup>10</sup>Clues to Our Family Names, pp. 127



August 18, 1583. Randall Janney was the son of Thomas Janney and Jane Worthington Janney, married December 7, 1578. Thomas died March 5, 1602 and Jane died August 10, 1589. The Lords of Haverland and Norfolk were descendants of the counts of Guynes/Gyney/Janney.

Lawrence/John Pearson was from the House of Lancaster back to William the Conqueror. His occupation was a stone mason. Lawrence was also the Bishop of Chester. Records have been found on our Pearsons in Buck County, PA., census records, Pearson relations, and William Wade Hinshaw's book on Quaker Records. Following is a list of Lawrence Pearson's children. The asterisk indicates those I believe to be our immediate pedigree:

1. \* First Generation: Lawrence Pearson, born ca. 1601/2, England; died December 26, 1673, Pownall Fee, England. Buried at Moberley, Cheshire, England. He was married to Elizabeth Janney. Children were born in Cheshire, England.

Children:

- 2 1. \* Edward Pearson, born ca 1648, England.
2. Martha Pearson, born ca 1650, died March 16, 1658, England.
3. Mary Pearson, born ca 1652. Married John Scarborough in Bucks Co., PA.
4. John Pearson, born July 5, 1654, died 1708 in PA. He came to America with his brother, Thomas July 29, 1683. No wife or children mentioned in will in Chester Co. PA.
- 3 5. Thomas Pearson, born ca 1656, died 1734 in Chester Co., PA.
6. Sarah Pearson, born September 9, 1659, England, married Robert Smith, Jr., May 7, 1684 at Hugh Burgess house. He was the son of Robert and Ellen Smith.

## SECOND GENERATION

2. \* Edward Pearson, born ca 1648, England, married Sarah Burgis January 6, 1671, Pownall Fee, Cheshire, England. They were Quakers. He died June 3, 1697. His widow married Martin Wildman, September 1698, PA.

Children:

1. Mary Martha Pearson, born May 27, 1673, England, died September 10, 1673, England.
2. Deborah Pearson, born August 25, 1675, England.
4. 3. Lawrence Pearson, born July 2, 1677, England.
4. Sarah Pearson, born August 27, 1680, England.

5. Enoch Pearson, born January 27, 1683, England.
6. Phebe Pearson, born April 12, 1685, England, died June 5, 1686, England.
7. Martha Pearson, born December 9, 1687, Penn., died February 23, 1690, PA.
3. Thomas Pearson, born ca 1656, England, married Margery Smith, February 1683, Pownall Fee, Chester Co., England. She was born February 1, 1659 and was the daughter of Robert and Ellen (Duncalfe?) Smith. She died about 1721 in Chester county, Penn. They came to America on the ship Endeavor, July 29, 1683. Settled in Marple TWP., Chester Co. PA. and was known as Thomas Pearson of Marple.

Children:

1. Robert Pearson, born October 2, 1683, PA. died ca 1753.
2. Thomas Pearson, born October 23, 1685, died 1705.
3. Lawrence Pearson, born October 20, 1687.
4. Enoch Pearson, born March 12, 1690.
5. John Pearson, born January 10, 1692, died before 1734, not mentioned in father's will.
6. Abel Pearson, born 29 February 1695.
7. Sarah Pearson, born April 8, 1697.
8. Benjamin Pearson, born January 10, 1698, died before 1734, not mentioned in his father's will.
9. Mary Pearson, born May 2, 1701.
10. Margery Pearson, born September 23, 1703.

THIRD GENERATION

4. \*Lawrence (Edward, Lawrence) Pearson, born July 2, 1677, England, married Ann Cooper. His will was dated July 27, 1752 and probated March 17, 1756. They resided in Pennsylvania.

Children:

14. 1. \*Joseph Pearson, born ca 1715.
2. Hannah Pearson, married \_\_\_\_\_ Fenton.



3. Martha Pearson, married \_\_\_\_\_ Shrigley: had Lawrence, Arthur, Enoch, and Mary.
4. Priscilla Pearson, married \_\_\_\_\_ McKinley.

## FOURTH GENERATION

14. \*Joseph (Lawrence, Edward, Lawrence) Pearson, born ca 1714-1716, married Elizabeth Lewis, ca 1740. Resided in PA.

Children:

1. Sarah Pearson, born March 30, 1742
2. Ann Pearson, born October 4, 1743
3. Mary Pearson, born August 14, 1745
4. Enoch Pearson, born January 22, 1746, died after March 15, 1775.
5. Elizabeth Pearson, born March 10, 1747
6. Lawrence Pearson, born December 31, 1752 (1732?)\*?
7. Daniel Pearson, born November 17, 175\_? (1754)
8. John Pearson, born November 8, 1756

I have copies (not very legible) of Lawrence and Ann Cooper Pearson's wills. Ann was the daughter of William Cooper from Buckingham. His abstract of will is recorded:

155. Cooper, William - of Buckingham. Sons Joseph and Henry executors. Son Abraham, Jonathan Cooper, Hannah Cooper, Ann Pearson, Sarah Bord?, Israel Cooper, grandchildren William, Elizabeth and Henry Huddleston. Witnesses Thomas Wattson, Rebecca Linton. Her mark and Joseph Fell. Signed with his mark. \_\_30, 1709, proved Feb 17, 1709-10.

Recorded P. 195.

Following is a letter I received from a cousin in Forney, Texas:

2045 FM 740 N  
Forney, TX 75126  
July 8, 1994

Dear Gloria:

Am sorry I have been so long getting you this information. I received your note and info about the same time that I received note and info from Muriel Cooper Bolitho. She is not particularly interested in Pearsons but interested in Ann Cooper who married Lawrence Pearson. Said they were not her direct line. She sent this abstract of William Cooper's will, showing him to be Ann's father, and a birth form for Ann and 2 of her twin siblings. So if we prove to be descended from Lawrence and Ann Cooper Pearson, we will have a little information on her family.

Also sending you a copy of ancestor chart she sent, if we turn out to be descended from Thomas instead of Edward. She also sent all these computer runs of Janneys and Pearsons. She has collected a lot of info on Pearsons considering that they are not her direct line.

This Amyx group sheet that I am sending came from Hallie Price Garner, who is related to Amyx, Greene, Pearsons and just about everyone. You may have corresponded with her. She knows Earl Cole of Knoxville, and knew Alton Lee Greene, who did the Greene and Seale books. I went to her house one day and she was very generous in sharing with me. Her son was in the military stationed near Trenton, NJ and took some pictures of the Wm. Greene home built around 1712. She evidently did not have copies of the pictures the day I was there as she did not show them to me. I would love to go there and see it for myself.

I will try to send you more information on the Janneys and Pearsons later. This is a busy time for me trying to get my flower beds cleaned, canning peaches, and this weekend cooking for a home coming at church. It's the 120 year anniversary, so a lot of people will be coming back.

Thank you for all the information that you sent. I do really appreciate it.

Sincerely,  
Dorothy Pearson Stanfield

To the best of my knowledge and ability to decipher and sort information sent to me, of which I have received a lot; I have assumed the above to be correct, but should someone prove me wrong, I'll be happy to accept any proof. I shall continue now with proven documents and established records of our Pearson line from Christian Pearson, the "American Revolutionary War Patriot". DAR and SAR membership is available with documents proving lineage to Christian Pearson.



## CHRISTIAN PEARSON

Christian Pearson, born 1755, died May 18, 1819, was born in Bucks Co., PA. He was a patriot in the American Revolutionary War. The D.A.R records record his services as: "Patriot: He took the oath of allegiance before Thomas Long, Esquire of Durham, Bucks County, PA. September 19, 1777 - Sept. 14, 1778". Letter from the PA Historical and Museum Commission included with Papers. Bucks Co. Oath of Allegiance Book No 1 - Herridge D.A.R. Library.

He married Catherine \_\_\_\_? He moved to Hawkins County, TN. and lived there until he died. His will is recorded in the Rogersville, TN courthouse. We descended from his son Henry Pearson.

Father-----Lawrence Pearson, born 1732, died 1803. Will proved 1803, dated 5, Sept. 1801.

Mother-----Elizabeth

## Children:

I. Michael, born 1775, died 1855, married Mary Polly Evans, born 1790.

## Children:

1. Thomas J. Pearson, born 1808, married #1 Eliza Campbell, #2 Elmira Campbell, daughter of John.
  2. William, born 1802
  3. Pleasant Hillery, born 1823, died 1908, married Martha Davis September 23, 1848.
  4. Nellie, born 1806, married Abraham Davis, born 1808, NC.
  5. Elizabeth, born 1806, married Joseph H. Davis, born 1805, NC.
  6. Sterling, born 1813, married Elizabeth Davis December 8, 1849.
  7. Catharine, born 1825, married Walter Davis December 20, 1842.
  8. Louisa, born 1818, married William Smith, born 1812, GA.
  9. Male, born 1827
  10. Female, born 1813
- II. Elizabeth "Betsy" Pearson, born 1777, died after 1840, married James Jones, born 1781, died 183\_. This family lived in Claiborne Co. TN.

## Children:

1. Preston Jones, born 1818, married Elizabeth \_\_\_\_?

2. Peter, born 1813, married Milley Davis

3. Catharine, born 1816, married Joseph Goodman

III. Mary Polly Pearson, born April 15, 1777/9, died July 16, 1860. Married Christian Swank (Shanks). He was born October 11, 1783, and died December 16, 1858.

Children:

1. Michael Shanks, born 1808, married Lear\_\_\_\_\_.

2. John, born 1810, died 1855, married Edna\_\_\_\_\_.

3. George, born 1811, married Lucy Webb, daughter of Theodorick.

4. William , born 1812, died 1862, married Catharine Cole, born 1811, died 1887.

5. Catharine, born 1815, married William Williams.

6. Henry , born 1821, married Jane\_\_\_\_\_.

7. Betsy, born 1823, married Wiley B. Kenner.

IV. George Pearson, born 1781, died 1824, married in McMinn. Co., TN. He married Vally Hail.

Children:

1. Pleasant Henderson Pearson, married Margaret Gears.

2. Jesse Wilson

3. Louisa, married William Devault in 1839.

4. George Washington, born 1814, died 1878, married Catharine Edington.

5. William Henry, married Rebecca\_\_\_\_\_.

6. Christopher Columbus , born 1820

7. Lusavada Jane

V. Catherine (Caty) Pearson, born 1785, died after 1850, married Henry Begley, born 1780 in VA.

Children:

1. John Begley, born 1806, married Alice\_\_\_\_\_.



2. Christian, born 1811
  3. William, born 1818, married Mary
  4. Pleasant, born 1807, married Manilla Rogers.
- VI. Lawrence Pearson, born 1787, died February 18, 1872, married Elizabeth Devault. She was born 1806 in TN. and died January 7, 1884. This family lived in Hawkins Co. TN.

Children:

1. John H. Pearson, born 1820, married Minerva Greene
2. Eliza Jane, born 1823, married Madison Cope
3. Emeline, born 1828, died 1857, married William H. Rogers
4. Catharine, born 1829, married #1 Francis W. Burton #2 John Payne
5. Lawrence, born 1829, married Elizabeth\_\_\_\_\_?
6. George E., born 1831
7. Adaline, born 1835, died April 26, 1911, married John A. Gilbert
8. Prior (Pryor) Lee, born 1837, married Sallie J. Lonney
9. Mary , born 1833, married William Hammons
10. Tip Lewis, born 1839, married Alice L. Bernard

- VII. John Pearson, born 1795, died 1871, married Franky Carpenter\_\_\_18, 1891. This family lived in Claiborne County, TN. D.A.R. records list wife as Sarah (Sally)

Children:

1. James M. Pearson, born 1825, died 1898, married Mary A. Eleazer, born 1830, died 1909.
2. Matilda J., born 1831, married William Asa Davis.
3. Martha E., born 1834, died 1903, married Willy Rowe in 1847.
4. William Harrison, born 1835, died 1897, married Sophonic Smith.
5. Manila, married G.W. Montgomery.
6. John B. born 1846, died 1866, married Rachel B. Davis, born 1842, died 1916.

7. Louise?, married Ben Wise
8. Matt, married Mary Holliwanger

Note: There is some confusion whether John Pearson had 2 wives or not. There has been claims that he married a Sally Pearson. There is speculation that Sally never married, or her husband is unknown. If anyone knows or has documents proving other wise, please let me know.

VIII. Henry Pearson, born 1785, died October 1, 1842, married Mary (Polly) Cole. She was born 1790, and died before March 4, 1872. Henry served in the war of 1812 as a private with Colonel Bunch and the TN Volunteers. I have some notes written me from Earl Cole. He said that his mother told him that Mary Polly Pearson was robbed and beaten by her son-in-law. Polly died shortly after the robbery. She supposedly had a lot of money. The son-in-law sat on her chest and crushed her. (This is the line the author is from).

Children:

1. Manerva Pearson, born September 2, 1837, died April 12, 1913. Married Riley Samuel Amyx, born April 10, 1837, and died February 25, 1916. (This is the line the author is from). More information on this line can be found in the AMYX chapter, under Riley Samuel Amyx. They lived in Treadway, TN. all their life and are buried in the AMYX cemetery on the land where they lived.
2. Louisa Pearson, born 1822, married Larkin Davis
3. Christopher Columbus, born 1821, died 1889, married Eliza J. Trent, born 1831, daughter of Benjamin and Elizabeth Winstead Trent.
4. John Mitchell, born February 2, 1825, died May 22, 1911. Married Genima Bean.
5. Sarah Ann, born 1824, married James Parly Johnson.
6. Stokely D. born 1834, married Elizabeth Jones, daughter of Peter and Malinda Jones.
7. Mariah, born 1826, married Wiley B. Helton.
8. Manilly, born 1840, married #1 James Jones, born 1839, died 1862; #2 Daniel McCloud, born 1829 in VA.
9. William McClennon, born 1829, died 1870, married Betsy Gonce.
10. Thomas Jefferson, born 1832, died 1917, married #1 Nancy Hamblen; #2 Jane \_\_\_\_ ?
11. Andrew Jackson, born 1833, died October 6, 1862, was a Civil War soldier in the Confederate Army.



12. Mary Jane, born 1837, died 1898, married William Trent, son of Benjamin Trent and Elizabeth Winstead Trent.

13. Eliza, born 1831, married James Berry.

IX. Peggy, born 1795-1800, married John Nash. They were living in Hawkins County, TN when the 1830 census was taken, but gone before the 1840 census. John Nash: 111001-110001, both age 30-40.

Children:

1. Male, born 1816
2. Male, born 1821
3. Female, born 1823
4. Male, born 1826
5. Female, born 1828

X. Susan (Sussy, Suzzy), born ca 1795, married Robert Alton (Altom) December 8, 1815 in Hawkins County, TN. In Hawkins County when the 1830 census was taken. 200001-001001. Probably moved to parts unknown before the 1840 census!

Children:

1. Female (Altom-Altum?), born 1816
2. Male, born 1826
3. Male, born 1828

XI. Sally, born ca 1785. She was listed in Christian Pearson's will as Sally Pearson. She could have been his daughter, or she could have married a Pearson. I do not know who her husband was. D. A. R. records have her as a daughter, and not married.

Children:

1. James Madison Pearson, born 1818, married Nancy\_\_\_\_\_?
2. Margaret Pearson (Peggy), born 1824.
3. Pleasant Hamak?, born 1826, married Margaret Gears. He was living in Perry County, IL. by 1854. He was listed as Haywell Pearson in the 1850 census of Hawkins Co. TN.
4. Elizabeth Jane, born 1833.

5. Emeline, born 1826.

Note: A Sally Pearson born before 1800, married Jonathan Mooney on December 6, 1835 in Hawkins County, TN.

XII. Christian, born 1780, died January 1, 1866, married Susannah Davis, born 1790, died 1867. She was the daughter of Hezekiah and Milly Johnson Davis.

Children:

1. Nancy, born 1812, married Isaac Bloomer, born 1804.
2. Elizabeth, born May 1, 1817, died February 10, 1882, married John Starnes, born 1807, died 1895.
3. William Jackson, born 1814, died March 13, 1864, married Margaret Bray.
4. Ambrose, born 1825.
5. Mary, born 1829.
6. George, born 1835.

#### WILL OF CHRISTIAN PEARSON

Dated May 14, 1819

In the name of God, Amen.

I Christian Pearson, Senr.? of Hawkins County, State of Tennessee, being of sound and perfect mind and memory, (blessed be God), do this 14th day of May in the year of our Lord, 1819, make and publish this my last will and testament, in manner following, that is to say, It is my will and desire to give all my Estate to all my sons and daughters to be divided between---equally, provided, never-the-less and upon condition that none of them attempt to raise an account against my Estate for work that they did for me after they arrived of age, and in case any of them do attempt to raise an account as above stated, than and in that case, It is my will and intention that each one of them so raising an account, shall have one dollar each to be levied out of my Estate, and in that case, it is my will and intention that the balance of my Estate be equally divided among the rest of my sons and daughters, that do not raise accounts as aforesaid.

First provided none of my sons and daughters attempt to raise accounts against my Estate as above provided against them in that case I give and bequeath all my Estate both and real and personal to all my said sons and daughters, namely, Michael Pearson, Betsy Jones, Polly Shanks, George Pearson, Christian Pearson, Caty Begley, Lawrence Pearson, John Pearson, Henry Pearson, Sally Pearson, Peggy Nash, and Sussy Pearson, to be equally divided among them, share and share alike, to them and their heirs forever.



Secondly, provided any of them do attempt to raise an account as aforesaid, that I give and bequeath to each of my sons and daughters so raising accounts against my estate as aforesaid the sum of one dollar each to be levied out of my Estate to them and their heirs forever.

Thirdly, provided that any of my said sons or daughters shall raise an account against my Estate for work done after they come of age as aforesaid, then and in that case I give and bequeath all the balance of my Estate, after the one dollar apiece for such as raise accounts is taken out to all of my sons and daughters that do not raise accounts as aforesaid, to be equally divided among them, share and share alike to them and their heirs forever.

And I do hereby appoint my sons, Lawrence Pearson and Henry Pearson, Executors of this my last Will and Testament. In witness whereof I the said Christian Pearson, Senr, have to this my last Will and Testament set my hand and seal the day and year above written.

Christian Pearson Seal

Signed, sealed, published and declared by the said Christian Pearson, Senr. the Testator, as his last Will and Testament in the presence of us who were present at the time of signing and sealing thereof.

Hezekiah Hamblin  
James Cardeu  
A. Chesnut

Robert Cardeu  
J.W. Cardeu

#### WILL OF HENRY PEARSON

13, Oct, 1841

I, Henry Pearson of the County of Hawkins and State of Tennessee, \_\_\_\_\_, do make and publish this my last Will and Testament, hereby revoking and making void all forever wills by me at my time heretofore made. And first, I direct that my body be decently interred in a manner suitable to my condition in life, and as to such worldly estate as it hath pleased God to intrust me with. I dispose of the same as follows, first, I direct that my debts and funeral expenses be paid as soon after my decease as possible out of my money that I may die possessed of or may first come into the hands of my Executors from any portion of my Estate real or personal.

Secondly, I give and bequeath to my beloved wife all my Estate real and personal, I do also wish her to make sale of all the personal property immediately after my death, if need require it to settle my debts, but if not I wish her to have the use of all the property, real and personal, so long as she lives or remains a widow. I wish her to give each of my children one hundred and fifty dollars out of my Estate, as soon as they arrive to the age of twenty one years of age, or sooner if they marry younger. The amount if not paid in money, it may be discharged in property at a cash valuation. I consider that Louisa Davis has already had her hundred and fifty dollars, but if my wife should marry at any time after my death, I wish my Estate to immediately disposed of as the law directs in such cases. And after each getting one hundred and fifty dollars, the balance equally divided.

I do hereby make ordain and appoint my esteemed wife and my beloved son Christopher Columbus Executors of this my last Will and Testament. In witness whereof I Henry Pearson have to this my will

written on one sheet of paper. set my hand and seal, this thirteenth day of October in the year of our Lord, one thousand eight hundred and forty one.

Signed, sealed and published  
in the presence of us  
Wm. Wilder  
W.C. Wilder

his  
Henry Pearson SEAL  
mark

PEARSON, Polly Dated 26 September 1871

Proven 4 March 1872

My children: William, McClellan, Christopher Columbus, Eliza, John M., Mariah, Sallie Ann, Thomas J., Stokely D., Jane and Manerva.

Wit: Wm. Green  
Thomas E. Brown

Page 109<sup>11</sup>

---

<sup>11</sup>Hawkins County TN. Will book I-II, 1786-1886, pp.80.





JAMES MADISON AND ZANA SEAL TRENT, PICTURE SENT TO ME FROM RED AMYX, NAME SAKE OF GREAT GRANDFATHER TRENT. BOTTOM: HOME PLACE OF JAMES MADISON AND ZANA SEAL TRENT IN HANCOCK COUNTY, TENNESSEE.





## CHAPTER ELEVEN

### TRENT FAMILY

Henry Trent, our first Trent ancestor was born in 1642 in Scotland. He immigrated to America and settled in the English Colony of Virginia. He died in 1701 in Henrico, County, VA. He Married Elizabeth Sherman, born about 1656 in England (probably). She was the daughter of Henry and Sisly Blackman Sherman. Sisly was the widow of Isaac Hutchins. She had no children by Hutchins.

These records can be found in Henrico County, VA, year , 1687:  
Abstract of Will:

Will of Henry Trent: To wife, Elizabeth, to children: Alexander, Henry, John, William, Mary Cox, wife of Richard Cox, Susanna and Rebecca Trent.

Children:

1. Alexander, married Obedience Branch Cocke, a widow. This Alexander is the ancestor of the rich, well known line of Virginia Trents.
2. Henry, married Edith Harris; this line also becomes rich and well known.
3. John, married Elizabeth\_\_\_\_\_, and the male line ends in two generations.
4. William, married Eursula Branch (?). (This is our line, although documents to prove it are very difficult to find, if at all).
5. Mary, married Richard Cox.
6. Rebecca married \_\_\_\_\_ Mather or Mathis?
7. Susanna, married \_\_\_\_\_ Nunnery.

Our ancestor, William Trent had at least three sons, but there is little information to be found about them. William had a son, William Trent, Jr., the one that our line came from. This William Trent, Jr. was heir to land in Chesterfield County, VA. that his father had been heir to and most likely said land was at one time in Henrico County. William Trent, Jr. died in Chesterfield County, VA., and left a will naming his children. Wife, unknown, was apparently dead. Of these children, only two have left sufficient evidence to be traced, Alexander and William Williamson Trent.

Alexander Trent was most surely our ancestor. Proof is not available. He lived in Chesterfield in 1759. He moved to Bedford County VA. before the Revolutionary War and later on to unknown



counties of VA. Alton Greene tells these two stories he picked up in Hancock County, TN. many years ago from different people, about Alexander, and leaves it to readers to take their pick.<sup>12</sup>

"Alexander Trent married \_\_\_\_\_ and they had a son named Alexander Jr., and others. His wife died and he married an Indian woman and they had our William and others, names unknown."

"Alexander Trent married \_\_\_\_\_ and they had a son named Alexander Jr., and others, names unknown. Alexander had an Indian woman, referred to by our Tennessee cousins as "a Cherokee Indian Maiden", who was his mistress, and that he had a child or children by her, one being our William Trent. When Alexander moved to another place in VA. he took said William with him, and when William and maybe other sons go back years later to see the mother, she was so dark and strange, that they left her".

Alexander Jr., born around 1759, and died 1841, had at least 2 sons by his first wife, (name unknown), Alexander and William. He had a daughter \_\_\_\_\_ Trent, or step-daughter, who carried the Trent name. She had a child fathered by Joseph Gilbert, of Lee County, VA. His name was Field Trent. Alexander Jr., was a Revolutionar War Veteran. He married Virginia Jane Burton in 1792, in Grayson county, VA. They had six children. He and his half-brother, William Trent lived with their Uncle William Williamson Trent in the Southeastern counties of VA.

William D. Trent, Sr. was born 1770 in Virginia, no record of his death. He met and married Jane's sister, Charity Burton Osborne, born in Virginia in 1773 and died in the 1820's. She was a widow, with a child named James Osborne. James later changed his name to Trent, and went through life as a Trent.

In 1798, Uncle William Williamson Trent, his wife, Sarah Susanna \_\_\_\_\_, along with his unmarried daughter, Nancy and his son, William Williamson Trent, Jr. and his wife Nancy Potts Trent; her sister, Hannah Potts Lawson and her husband, Drury Lawson; our William and Charity Burton Trent; and Alexander and Jane Burton Trent and their children all leave Chesterfield County, VA. and move around in the Southwestern counties of Va. Finally they arrive in what is now called Hancock County, TN.

Children of William and Charity Burton Trent: (Our Line).

1. James Osborne Trent, born 1795, died 1860, married Elizabeth Johnson, born 1799.
2. Alexander Trent, born 1797, married Mary Polly Martin, born 1797. (Our line).
3. Virginia Jane Trent, born 1800, died 1876, married Richard Greene, born 1796, died 1875.
4. Zachariah G. Trent, born 1801, died 1860's, married Naomi Greene, born 1801, died 1877.
5. Elizabeth Trent, born 1803, married Jesse Cope August 1, 1820.

---

<sup>12</sup>The Seale Family Tree, 1730-1965, by Alton Greene

6. Mary Trent, born 1805, married Timothy Holdoway.
7. Mahala Trent, born 1808, married Thomas Martin.
8. Richard Trent, born 1810, died 1860's, married Elizabeth Jones, born 1810, died 1914.
9. William D. Trent, Jr., born 1814, married Annie Jones, born 1814, died 1860's.
10. David Trent, born 1820, died 1850's, married Manerva Hawk, born 1820.

Alexander Trent, born 1797 in Virginia to William and Charity Burton Osborne Trent. He married Mary Polly Martin, born 1797. They lived in Hancock County, TN and farmed. My cousin, Mary Thelma Cloud Odom told Roy and me that she believed they had slaves. One of these slaves was named Washington James, born 1820 in Virginia.

Children of Alexander and Mary Polly Martin: (Our line).

1. William Trent, born 1817, died 1858, married Mary Polly Baker, born 1818.
2. Thomas Trent, born 1823, married Sarah.
3. Elizabeth Trent, born 1826.
4. Zachariah Trent, born 1828, married Susan Pratt, born 1837.
5. Pleasant Trent, born 1831, died 1860, married Elbira Berry Trent, born 1834, died 1907.
6. Jesse Trent, born 1836.
7. James Madison Trent, born 1841, married Zannie (Zana) Seal, born 1842. (Our line).

In the 1830 census I found Trent, Alexander: 000010001-10000001. In the 1850 census Alexander Trent is listed: Trent, Alexander 52, Mary 52, Elizabeth 24, Zachariah 22, Pleasant 18, Jesse 12, Madison 9, Washington James 20, T T, Ha-197-29.

When Roy and I went to Tennessee and visited our Trent cousins, this story was found in one of the books that I bought about great grandpa Trent.

"Madison Trent was a very large man, and was real black.. He went by the name "Old Black Matt." I suppose this came from his great grand mother who was a Cherokee Indian. Matt and Zanie had a farm in the Trent Valley section of Hancock Co. TN. They kept cattle, sheep and some very fine horses, and every where he went, he rode a horse. He had



the biggest horse in the Valley, because he was a big man. Matt had a black smith shop on his farm, where he made horse shoes. He also shod horses for all his neighbors".

"Joe Harris was being hung in Rogersville, and Matt went to the hanging. Matt got drunk and the law tried to arrest him. During the ordeal Matt whipped eight Negroes. If he was ever arrested was not confirmed. Matt had slaves. One was mentioned in the 1880 census record. His name was Washington James, born 1820". I believe this slave previously belonged to Matt's dad.

This article was found in Alton Greene's book about "Uncle Matt".

"Somewhere in my house is a trunk, with a picture of Uncle Matt and Aunt Zannie (Seal) Trent. They are a handsome couple, he, large, round of face, sitting in a chair dressed in his best suit, while she stands by the chair with her hand on his shoulder. If memory serves me correct, she was a small dainty woman with black eyes and black hair and fair skin. Uncle Matt looks for the world what one would think a well-to-do "Dutchman" looked like long ago.

"Uncle Matt was a rounder in his day and time; prone to tilt a fruit jar pretty regular. One night after an election in Rogersville, he, causing the law some trouble, was taken to the jail to be locked up. The jail was full so the law men put him (along with others) in the stable, chaining the men to the post. Next morning when a Negro boy came to groom the horses, Uncle Matt insisted that he too, should be groomed; for after all, he was locked up in the stable".

"One night, Uncle Matt and Aunt Zannie were going to spend the night with her sister, Patsy, and her husband, Robert A. Greene. At this time Uncle Matt weighed somewhere in the neighborhood of 250 lbs. When he got into the bed it collapsed. Every one ran into the room as he started hollering and cussing. They finally got the bed fixed and Uncle Matt got laid out for sleep. When all of a sudden the clock on the shelf over the bed fell down and hit him on the head. Telling his brother-in-law he was trying to kill him, he put on his clothing and went home."

Here is another version of why Grandpa Trent was called "Old Black Matt".

"Now "Uncle Matt" was called "Black Matt" Trent, mostly because people thought of him as black hearted, to their way of thinking. However not real dark of skin as many believed and told about him. All his church going kin tried to "save" Uncle Matt, seemly they tried everything".

Here is data passed on to Alton Greene from Sherrill Williams:<sup>13</sup>  
 Rogersville Herald  
 May 7, 1890 In Memoriam

"Sarah Eliza Trent, daughter of William H. Trent and Nancy Trent was born March 1, 1885 in Hancock Co. and died at her home September 21, 1889 of fever and flu. She wanted her brother Joab to pray as long as he lived, so he could live with her in glory. She said she would soon be with William Taylor, her sister Cordie's little son, and Nancy Jane, her sister, Mary's little daughter, and her brother, Columbus in Glory. She said she hoped the good Lord, would meet with her Uncle Madison Trent at her grave".

Alton Greene said he didn't know if Uncle Matt ever joined the church, repented, reformed or what. Neither do I! Hopefully he did. Well, that is enough bad stories on Grandpa Trent. Here is something positive he did do. He was a Union soldier during the civil war. He was captured by Confederate soldiers and placed in a Confederate Prison Camp from which he escaped. (Andersonville, GA.)

Roy and I went to visit Roy Amyx and his daughter Freddie Jane Memorial Day Weekend in 1993. We had a wonderful visit and dinner with both of them. Roy has been my staunch support as far as making pictures of the family for me, giving me information and telling me where all of our kinfolk lived in Tennessee. I am sorry he didn't get to see my book. I want to acknowledge him and his support and help.

While visiting Roy and Freddie I came across two letters from Grandma Zana Trent to Uncle Sam, when he was a young man. I treasure the copies I have of these letters, and would like to share them with you, so that you too, may know a little of who she was, how she felt, etc.

Treadway, Tenn.  
 November 23, 1904

Mr. Samuel Amyx  
 Dear Friend:

I will drop you a few line to let you know we are all well as common and hope those few lines will find you all the same. Well Samuel, I went and had your fortune told. She said you was to marry a low heavy set blue eyed and fair complexion girl and she lived close to you and her folks was well to do people and said that there was a high, slim, dark complexioned girl you could get and said there was a chance of you marrying twice; but you would marry the light complected girl and do well.

Eva Frasier said tell you she would like to see you. Bob Seals and John Frasier is both married now and has got a kid a piece and is doing very well. Bob lives on Holston River. Matt said tell you he was getting old and said you was making enough money to come out and see us all.

---

<sup>13</sup> Ibid. pp. 46



Sam, I am proud you are doing well and well thought of. Tom is staying with us yet and a very good boy and is well thought of. He is nearly grown now. He says he aims to come out there when he gets old enough. Samuel you must come and see some of the Tennessee girls. There are several pretty girls out here and some wants to marry, ha ha.

Sam your Uncle Samuel's Minnie has married and they have just got one grown girl at home now. Little Matt Trent is doing very well, he has got two girls nearly grown. He is making money very fast and he wants to see you.

Sam, I want you to be a good boy and think of what Fanny told you and try and meet her in a better world and I want you to write and tell me whether Nancy told you the truth or not.

I want you to write to me as quick as you get this letter. So I hope to see you all some time in life, if not, I hope we will meet in a better land where sad partings never come. I close this time.

From your old gramma Trent  
To Samuel Amyx

Following is another letter written to Uncle Sam 18 years later:

Treadway, Tenn.  
May 9, 1922

Mr. S. Amyx  
Dear Grandson:

Will try and ans your letter this eve. Sure was pleased to hear from you. Sam, I guess this will be the last letter I will ever ans, for I can't live much longer. I thought I was going to die last night, but I am still here; tho I know I can't live many more days; but I am ready to go at any time.

Tell all your brothers sisters and all to meet me in Heaven. Tell your daddy I wish him good luck and hope how well he may do. I am sending James Madison a dollar. It is a small present but he can get him a little something with it. I wish I could send you all something, but I have been sick so long and had to pay so much Dr. bills, I can't send you anything.

Tell all your children to be good and prepare themselves for a better world than this. I hope how well you will do preaching. We have had so much rain here this Spring. People are behind with their work.

I will close. Write soon and if I am not here, Bob or someone will ans. your letter.

Good Bye, as ever  
your loving grandma  
Zana Trent

James Madison Trent, born 1841 in Hawkins County, Tennessee. He was the son of Alexander and Mary Polly (Martin) Trent. He married Zanie (Zana) Seal, born 1842. Zana was the daughter of Samuel Seal and Nancy Brewer Seal. Their children are:

1. Orlena (Orlene) Trent, born September 29, 1859, died September 16, 1913. She married William Harvey Amyx, October 30, 1878, in Hancock County, TN.
2. Madison Trent, born 1864, married \_\_\_\_\_ Helton.
3. Elijah Trent, born 1867. Died as a child.
4. \_\_\_\_\_ Trent. Died as a child.



## CHAPTER TWELVE

## SEALE FAMILY

When I started doing my research, I never dreamed I would find such a treasure trove of information, nor find cousins who were willing to share their information with me. That is why I am writing this book. To pass what little we have been able to preserve and find about our ancestors and pass on to the future generations.

I am so thankful to a man named, Alton Greene, from Sanger, TX. He spent years traveling, visiting relatives, writing, and preserving genealogy history none of us may ever have known or found out. Because of him, I have been able to discover who my Trent, Seale, and Brewer ancestors were. The Greene family is richly entwined with all of our families, including the Amyx family. In genealogy, one learns to accept the so-called (colorful) stories along with those you might consider appealing or important. You find out things you may not necessarily want to know. But all of this is just life. Now I would like to continue with our Seale family history.

Our first proven Seal ancestor, was William Seale. The first records on him are found in Halifax County, VA. in 1753. William was probably born in 1730, probably in the American Colonies, and probably VA.

William always spelled his name with an (e), which points to his English ancestry. Proper names in England such as Seal were always spelled with this final e. Seal was a place, a dwelling, an area, but as a proper name the English spelled it SEALE. Seals, Seale, Seal - England, means Dweller in, or near, a hall, one who came from Seal (hall or small wood), the name of places in Kent and Derbyshire, or from Seale (hall) in Surry.

William Seale was born a subject of King George II, who was more interested in his German land and titles than he was in England or his American colonies. During his rule the war between England and France began. It moved to America and became "The French and Indian War." The French in Canada enlisted the American Indians to help fight the English and the Colonies, thus we find our William Seale, subject of King George II, caught up in this war and it brings us to Halifax Co. VA. in 1753.

William Seale, during his life, was a farmer, a deputy sheriff and a school teacher. These occupations have been followed by countless descendants of his.

William Seale:

Born about 1730, place unknown. Died after 1815 in Pittsylvania Co. or Halifax Co. VA.  
Married Nancy Anna \_\_\_\_\_?

Children:

1. Zackariah Seal, born 1754, married \_\_\_\_\_? (Our line).

2. Peter Seal, born 1756, married \_\_\_\_\_?

3. James Seal, born 1758, married \_\_\_\_\_?
4. Solomon Seal, born 1760, married #1 \_\_\_\_\_ Simpson, no proof, #2 Susannah Hall.
5. \_\_\_\_\_ Seal, born 1763.
6. Elizabeth Seal, born 1767, married John Givens.
7. William Seal, Jr., born 1769, married Margaret Hall.

There may have been more children. All of William's children spelled their names with an (e).

Following is a partial list of records which can be found on William Seale:

Land and Property records. Pittsylvania Co. VA.

William Seale bought 400 acres of land in Halifax County, VA in 1756 at head of Rocky River running toward the Lich of Wolfe Hill.

Colonial Soldiers of Halifax Co. VA. 1758. French and Indian War.

Colonel Abraham Maury: Captains, Lieutenants, and Privates listed.

William Seale was a private.

Halifax county, VA, book 3, Page 257, 1766, July Court.

Ordered that the Church Warden of Antrim Parish in this County do bind out Zackary, Peter, James, and Solomon Seale, poor children of William Seale according to law. It appearing to the court that said father is not able to maintain and instruct them in Christian principals.

(The all powerful and strong Church of England at that time could do things like that in the early colonies).

Pittsylvania County, VA. Defendants Index to Court Orders, August 1799.

Book 9, Page 137. William Seale appointed Constable of this county.

Following is a lively interesting story about our forebear, William Seale:

Halifax County, VA. 1753

Plaintiff - Murphy

Defendant - Seale

Joseph Murphy an infant under the age of twenty one years by Elenor Smith his mother and next friend--against William Seale. For reasons appearing to this court ordered that this suit be dismissed.



From other records it would seem that Elenor Smith had first married \_\_\_\_ Murphy, that said Murphy left his son, Joseph also some money. Elenor married second time to Gideon Smith who had also been married before and he had left her and his Smith children some money which seemly said Elenor was spending freely. It appears that William Seale had borrowed or took as a gift, money from Elenor that belonged to her son Joseph Murphy and was helping her spend Smith money.

Zackeriah Seal, Son of William and \_\_\_\_\_? was born in 1754 in Halifax CO. VA. He died before 1828 in Hawkins Co. TN. It is not known who Zackeriah married, but following is a list of his children:

1. Female Seal, born 1773
2. Peter Seal, born 1775, married #1 \_\_\_\_\_? #2 Rachel Lamb, #3 \_\_\_\_\_?  
(Our line).
3. Female Seal, born 1778
4. Female Seal, born 1780
5. Female Seal, born 1783
6. Solomon Seal, born 1785, married Nancy Thompson
7. Female Seal, born 1787
8. Heniekel Seal, born 1790, married Sarah Hammond
9. Alfred Seal, born 1793, married Sarah \_\_\_\_\_?

Zacheriah Seals is listed in the 1830 Hawkins County, TN. census: Seals, Zacheriah, 01001-20101.

It is believed that Zackeriah fought in the Revolutionary War, but no proof. He was a Baptist Preacher. He witnessed to different land sales of his father and brothers. He is a taxpayer in 1782-1787 in Pittsylvania Co. VA. Lives house to house with his father William Seal and his brothers Solomon and James Seal. In 1791 Zackeriah moved his family to Randolph Co. NC where his brother Solomon had moved. Three of Zackeriah Seal's sons, Hezekiah, Peter and Solomon, were soldiers in the war of 1812 with England.

Peter Seal, son of Zackeriah and wife \_\_\_\_\_?, was born about 1775 in Pittsylvania Co. VA. He died in Montgomery, Co. NC. Following is a list of his children by his first wife, (name unknown).

1. Female, born 1798.

2. Zackeriah Seal, born 1800, married Elizabeth Lamb.
3. Elizabeth Seal, born 1802, married Pleasant Brewer.
4. Anne Seal, born 1805.
5. Female, born 1807.
6. Female, born 1810.
7. Sarah Seal, born 1810, married Isham Brewer.
8. Samual Seal, born 1815, married Nancy Brewer. (Our line).

Children by Peter and Rachel Lamb Seal:

1. John Seal, born 1823, married Locky Ann Moles?
2. James Seal, born 1825, married Mary Wilder.
3. Jarvis Seal, born 1826, married #1 Nibley Rydor #2 Emaline Harris.
4. Sarah Seal, born 1832, married John Wyatt.

Children by Peter and his third wife \_\_\_\_\_. The story is Peter never divorced his second wife, but went off to Montgomery Co., NC.

1. Jackson Seal, born 1835.
2. Noah Seal, born 1837, married Mary Brown.
3. Rebecca Seal, born 1839.
4. Jemima Seal, born 1843.

Peter Seal was said to have a problem, "women"! One story told on him by a descendant said that after the family had been in NC several years, that Peter went back to VA to visit his relatives and while there got involved with a married woman and her husband had to run him out of VA. He was said to have illegitimate children by women in now Hancock Co. TN. His second wife, Rachel, was retarded. The children by his first wife disliked the fact that he had married Rachel. They would not acknowledge his children by Rachel as Seals, but called them "Peter"s.<sup>14</sup> Peter's third wife was about 40 years younger than himself.

---

<sup>14</sup>Seale Family Tree, 1730 - 1965.



Peter Seal served in the French Indian War under General Andrew Jackson, who later became President.

State of Tennessee Hawkins County

Know all men by these present that I Peter Seal, a private in Capt. Benjamin Powell's Company, East TN. Militia, do authorize nominate and appoint Lawrence Pearson my true and lawful attorney for me and in my name and for my own proper use and benefit to ask and demand and receive and receipt to the paymaster for all such sum or sums of money that is owing unto me the said Peter Seal for a tour of duty served against the hostile Creek Indians under command of Capt. Benjamin Powell as afore said and do further authorize him the said Lawrence Pearson to endorse and receipt to the paymaster of the United States all and every paper that is lawful as the \_\_\_\_\_ was present at the drawing myself---where of I have here unto set my hand and seal this third day of September, 1816, in the presence of

His  
Peter Seal  
Mark

Attest:

Joab Brewer Esquire  
John Deeney  
James Orrick

Richardson Creek Baptist Church Records of 1827 list Zackeriah Seal, Dawson Seal, and Peter Seal, among other members.

Peter Seals, is listed in the Hawkins County, TN census of 1830: Seals, Peter, 31000001-00011.

Samual Seal, son of Peter Seal and his first wife \_\_\_\_\_?, was born 1815 in Hawkins County, TN. He married Nancy Brewer, July 4, 1832 in Hawkins Co. TN. She was born December 4, 1816, and died April 1891. Nancy was the daughter of Howell Cobb Brewer (See Brewer Chapter), and his first wife Nancy (Short) Brewer. They had 17 children of which 11 grew to maturity. They are as follows:

1. Pleasant Seal, born 1833, married Elizabeth Greene.
2. Lucy Seal, born 1836, married James L. Vaughan.
3. Elizabeth "Betty" Seal, born 1839, married Wm. Billy Drinnon.
4. Mary J. Seal, born 1841, married #1 David Greene #2 Woodson T. Trent.
5. Zannie Seal, born 1843, married James Madison Trent. (Our line). See Trent Chapter.
6. Sarah Seal, born 1845, married #1 Houston Greene #2 Joe Buttry.

7. Nancy Seal, born 1847, married William Harve Trent.
8. Merniva Seal, born 1851, married John Greene.
9. Martha Seal, born 1853, married Robert A. Greene.
10. Samual Seal, Jr, born 1854, married Jane Odom.
11. Liza Seal, born 1858, married John Westly Davis.

The "Seale Girls" were counted as the local Belles in that area. There were nine girls in this family. In the Rogersville Herald, dated February 4, 1886, Samuel Seal age 74 and wife Nancy Seal age 72, are still living near here and enjoying common health. They have 89 grandchildren living, 10 dead, 81 great grandchildren living and 17 dead, and 1 great grandchild married.

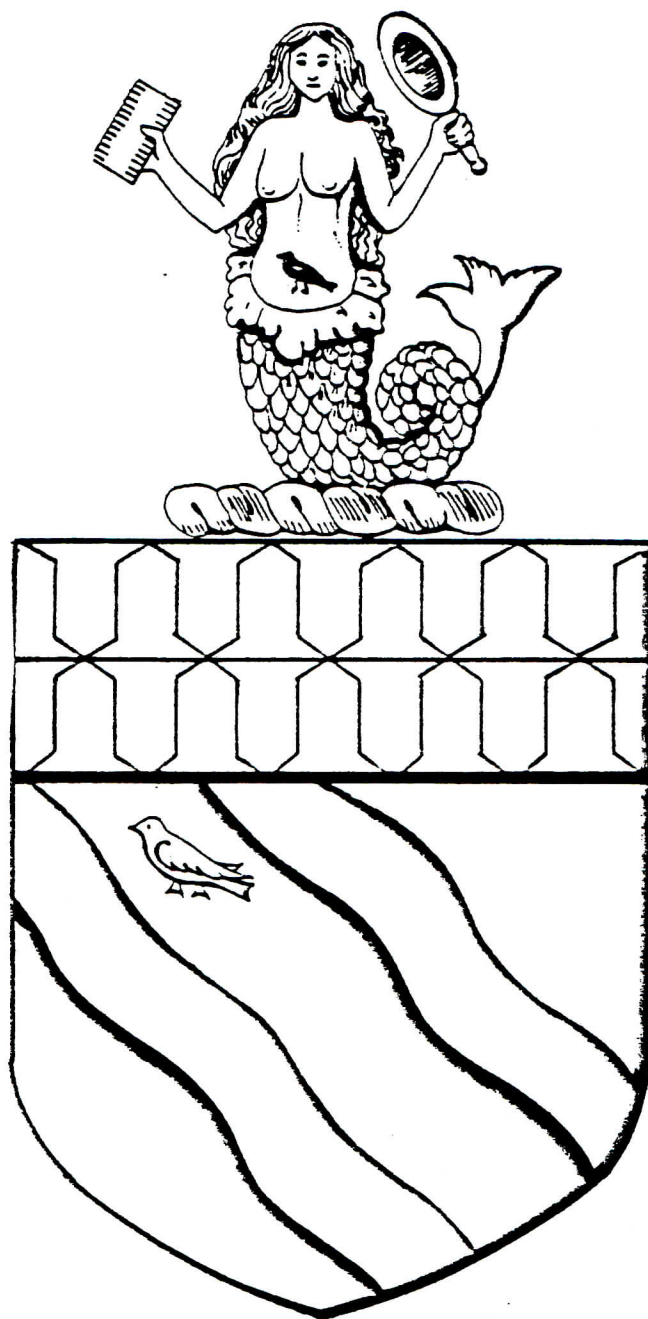
R.S. Seal Reporter

The Mulberry Gap Association Records gives an account of our great great grandmother's death: Sister Nancy Seal was born Dec. 4, 1816 and was married to Samual Seal July 4, 1832. Died April 1891 of la-grippe. The records said Nancy Seals joined War Creek Baptist Church in 1835.

When Roy and I stopped in Rogersville, TN. and went to the courthouse to do research, I found a copy of Samual and Nancy Brewer Seal's marriage license recorded in the marriage book. I was more than happy to make a copy.

There is much more on the Seale Family in Alton Greene's book, but I have only chosen to write about our immediate family line. I hope you have enjoyed reading about our Seale Heritage. I found it to be very interesting and different from most of the other families. I am proud to be a mixture of all of these families!





**COAT OF ARMS**  
**PEDIGREE BREWER FAMILY OF LONDON, ENGLAND**  
Visitation of London, Vol. 1  
Harleian Society, London, England, 1880

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

## BREWER FAMILY

Of all the families that I have researched, with the exception of the AMYX family, I suppose I was happiest to discover our Brewer Family, and the wealth of information that surrounds this family. If anyone wants to find out more about this family, I would suggest and recommend that you purchase the book, The Long Brewer Line Colonial Family Genealogy, by Ben R. Brewer. This is a beautiful red, hardbound, leather-covered, book. The research that he has done is astounding.

I remember reading a newspaper article years ago that Mother had acquired while in Sanger on the family of Orlene Trent. The part I remembered the most was these ancestors were Huguenots. This intrigued me because I didn't know what or who the Huguenots were. I read the article and was impressed to find out we had French ancestors that were aristocratic and Protestants who pulled away from the Catholic Church in the 1500's and 1600's. These people were severely persecuted and very dedicated to their beliefs. They would fight to the very end for their religious convictions. If anyone is interested, I would recommend going to the Library and finding books about the Huguenots, or read about them in the encyclopedia.

I did not even recall being a descendant of the Brewer Family. When Edna Jones gave me her copies of the Seale and Greene books, I began to pour over them, digesting everything that I possibly could. On the trip home from Maryland last year, we stopped in Rogersville, TN. and I found Samuel and Nancy Brewer's marriage record. This excited me, so I began searching for more information in the courthouses. Roy and I went over to Hancock County Courthouse in Sneedville, TN. and started searching there. This is where I ran into a gold mine of information.

The courthouse in Sneedville burned twice. Records are scarce. The court clerk sent me over to the Register Office because they had been able to save quite a lot of the land deeds. As I was talking to the clerk about families I was researching, she wanted to know exactly who I was descended from in the Brewer family. When I told her Howell Cobb, she went into the vault and came out and copied some 30 pages or so and came over and handed them to me. She said, "I am your cousin". Roy almost flipped out. He had already said, "I bet you don't find any relatives in here". She also descended from Howell Cobb. In these records was a copy of a newspaper article telling about the D.A.R. celebration and placement of a "headstone" at Ambrose Brewer's grave. He was the Father of Howell Cobb. After I got home I read this article and found the name and address of our Brewer relatives in KY. who were responsible for this occasion. I wrote this cousin, and she sent me a booklet about AMBROSE BREWER, and told me about BEN BREWER and his book. Of course, I had to buy this book too!

The English historian Lord MacCaulay said, "A people that takes no pride in the accomplishments of their remote ancestors will probably produce nothing worthy of recollection by their obscure ancestors." The generation of today has a total disdain for the past they believe irrelevant to their problems or needs, and indulges in excessive preoccupation with concerns of



only the immediate moment. Hopefully, those of us who try to preserve our heritage on paper will be valued in years to come, if not now.

The Brewer name begins in the early 12th Century. It derived from the occupation of beer makers, or brewers. The ancestral residence is Bruyere in France. The name can be found spelled different ways: Bruere, Bruyere, Briwere, Bruer, Breuer, Brywre, Brewyr, Brewere, Brewar, and Brewerton. Some have even spelled it Brewster.

In 1947, Edward Denton Brewer of Tulsa, OK. published The House of Brewer. This book starts with Thomas Brewer who lived from 1540 to 1610 and who married a Miss Drake. His son John, it is said, was born in England in 1565 and died in Virginia in 1635. He married Mary Grove and his will was probated in London, England. John, his wife and three children, came to America shortly after 1624. He was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1629-30. His children were John, Frances, Mary, Margaret and Roger. This last John, according to this source, was the father of George Brewer who settled in Brunswick County, VA and died there in 1744 leaving his second wife, Alice and a host of children.

In Ben R. Brewer's book, he traces the William Brewer family, by going over to England, doing research, going on to France and researching the Lanier Family; then comes back to America and tries to tie our family in with the William Brewer Family. He could not find any proof or documents connecting us to this prominent Colonial Brewer Family.

However, he does include their history in his book, leaving it open to the possibility that we might be descended from them. Thus, I would like to include the pedigree of this family. It follows:

#### WILLIAM BREWER OF CHARD ENGLAND

William Brewer was born 1553-58 around Chard, England, and died July 24, 1618. He married Deanes Baker, 1578, born ca 1553-58. She died November 8, 1614. (I am only following the immediate line that came to America, and leading to the line that supposedly we came from). Following are their children:

1. Peter Brewer, born 1568, died 1619, married Elizabeth.
  1. Peter Brewer
  2. Mary Brewer
2. William Brewer, married Dorothy Haward.
3. Thomas Brewer, born ca 1570's, died August 2, 1639, married \_\_\_ Drake.
  1. Thomas Brewer
  2. John Brewer
4. Christopher Brewer
5. John Brewer, married 1594 to Mary Grove, daughter of Ralph Grove; died

1634.

1. John Brewer
2. Francis Brewer
3. Mary Brewer

6. Edward Brewer, born 1574, died September 9, 1612.

Thomas Brewer, born in Chard, Somerset, England ca 1572, died August 2, 1639, married a Drake, daughter of Richard Drake and Christine Fauscett of London.

Children:

1. John Brewer
2. Thomas Brewer

John Brewer I, the American Colonist was married in London February 12, 1615 to Mary Drake. John was a member of the Virginia company of London. John was a grocer in London, a title given to the members of the "elite" Grocers Company of London. He, along with others, signed a petition to the King most excellent, in behalf of the ancient planters and adventurers to the Colony of Virginia. They were pleading to the King for commodities to supply the people of the new Kingdom, who were in distress, due to war with the Indians, etc. Following are the Baptismal records for five children:

1. Anne Brewer, born December 16, 1616.
2. John Brewer, born April 11, 1619.
3. Mary Brewer, born February 15, 1620.
4. William Brewer, born March 3, 1621.
5. Margaret Brewer, born March 30, 1623.
6. Roger Brewer, born ca 1623-4.

John Brewer II, was Born April 11, 1619 in England and died in Virginia in 1669. He married Anne Reade, daughter of John Read. John's son, John III, did not have any known heirs, or children. He left his inheritance to his brother, Thomas. Children of John Brewer II and his wife Anne Reade:

1. John Brewer III, born ca 1635, died 1708
2. Thomas Brewer, born ca 1639, died 1698

Some authors have tried to take us from William of Chard England to Thomas Brewer, brother of John Brewer. I agree with Ben Brewer, that until documents are found or produced to declare our connection to this family, we have to assume otherwise.



## GEORGE BREWER AND SARAH LANIER

Our ancestor and Brewer Grandsire, lived on the lower side of Reedy Branch in 1723 in Prince George County. Prince George County was formed from land on both sides of the James River. This land at one time had been part of Charles City County.<sup>15</sup> Most of this information has been obtained from two authors, Ben R. Brewer, and Marvin T. Broyhill, III, of Colonial Heights, VA. There is much speculation about the father of George Brewer. Many believe him to be the son of Nicholas Brewer. Others strongly suggest he is the son of Henry Brewer. Both of these men were the sons of a George Brewer found in Charles City records in the 1650's. In the book Brewer Families of Colonial Virginia, by Marvin T. Broyhill, III, we find: "It seems far more likely that George Brewer of Brunswick was the son of either Nicholas and Henry Brewer; both were probably the sons of the George Brewer who appears in Charles City County records during the late 1650's"

Broyhill's book is an interesting study done over several years on the Brewer families of Virginia. He has done an extensive study and covered practically all of the Brewer families, of which there were many that settled along the James River during the 17th Century. Broyhill could not connect our George Brewer to the John Brewer mentioned at the beginning of this chapter

George, Brewer was born ca 1658, and died 1744 in Brunswick County, VA. He married #1 Sarah Lanier, born ca 1686, and died ca 1728. George married Sarah Lanier in Charles City Co. VA, around 1705. She was the daughter of John Lanier, Jr, and his second wife Sarah Edmunds. The Lanier Family is the famous French Huguenot family that left France and fled to England to escape religious persecution. More about the Laniers is in the following chapter. George and Sarah Lanier Brewer are buried in the Meherrin Parish Graveyard. Following is a list of their children:

1. William Brewer, born ca 1705, died ca 1799. He married Susannah.
2. Oliver Brewer, born ca 1707.
3. Henry Brewer, born ca 1708. Married Mary, Brunswick Co. VA.
4. Nathaniel Brewer, born ca 1710.
5. Sarah Brewer, born ca 1712, married Matthew Vick.
6. Lanier Brewer, born ca 1714, married Joanna.
7. George Brewer, born ca 1716, died October 24, 1760, married Abigail Wyche.

---

<sup>15</sup>The Long Brewer Line, by Ben R. Brewer.

8. Nicholas Brewer, born ca 1717, died ca 1782, married Sarah.
9. John Brewer, born 1718, died 1763-7, married Mary.
10. Hoel (Howell) Brewer, born ca 1720, (Our Line), married #1 Rebecca Willis, died 1756, #2 Marion May, ca 1775, daughter of John May.

Following are the children of George and Alice Burwell, who were married by 1729. Alice was born ca 1700, and died in 1744.

1. Burrell Brewer, born 1730, died 1799, married Elizabeth Patrick, died 1800.
2. Joseph Brewer, born ca 1732.

I would like to enclose the will of George Brewer, I.

In the NAME OF GOD AMEN: This 13th day of July 1741, I George Brewer of the County of Brunswick, VA. being very sick and weak in body but of perfect mind and memory thanks be given unto God therefore calling unto mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my Last Will and Testament. That is to say, principally and first of all, I give and recommend my soul into the hands of God that gave it. And my body I recommend to the Earth to be buried in a decent Christian burial at the discretion of my Exor. Not doubting but at the General Resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God. And as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased Almighty God to bless me in this life, I give devise and dispose of the same in the following manner and form.

IMPRIMIS. I give devise and bequeath unto my son William Brewer that parcel of land whereon he now dwelleth beginning at the branch on this side of his house and all on the south side thereof to him and his heirs forever. Item. I give devise and bequeath unto my son Oliver Brewer all the rest of this tract of land whereon I now dwell to him and his heirs forever. Item. I give devise and bequeath unto my son Henry Brewer all that tract of land between Fountain Creek and Rattle Snake Creek to him and his heirs forever. Item. I give, devise and bequeath unto my son Nathaniel Brewer two hundred and fifty acres of land lying on both sides of the old Roanoak Road, to him and his heirs forever. Item. I give devise and bequeath unto my daughter Sarah Vick one hundred and fifty acres of land lying on both sides of the old Roanoak Road aforesaid to her and the heirs of her body. Item. I give and bequeath unto Alice my dearly beloved wife that estate whereon we now dwell together with all my household goods and stock both within doors and without doors for the maintenance of all my younger children that hath pleased God to give me by her during her life or until she marry again. Item. I give unto my son Lanier Brewer a young steer. Item. I give unto my son George Brewer a young horse. Item. I give unto my son Nicholas Brewer a cow and calf. Item. I give unto my son John Brewer a cow and calf. Item. I give unto my son Hoel Brewer a young horse that we I call Snip and feathers to make him a bed. Item. I give unto my son Henry Brewer a gun. Item. I give unto my son Oliver Brewer a gun. Item. I give unto my son Nathaniel Brewer a gun. Item. It is my true will, intent and pleasure that when my wife dies or marries again that my personal estate together with all my household good and stock both within doors and without doors may be equally divided among my younger children that it has pleased God to give me by her. And lastly, I hereby constitute make and ordain my dearly beloved wife Alice my Exor.



and my son Hoel Brewer my Exor. of this my last will and testament to see that it be duly and honestly performed according to the true interest and meaning thereof. And I do hereby utterly, disallow, revoke and disannul all and every other former testaments, wills, legacies, and requests and executions by me in any ways before named willed and bequeathed ratifying and confirming this and none other for to be my last will and testament. In witness whereof I have here set my hand and seal the day and year above written.

X His mark  
George B. Brewer (L.S.).

Signed, sealed, published, and declared by George Brewer as his last will and testament in the presence of us the subscribers.

Douglas Powell

M. Shaw

John Norwood

At a court held for Brunswick Co. on the 2nd day of August 1744 this will was presented in Court by Alice Brewer and Howell Brewer the Exors. therein named who made oath thereto according to law and was proved by the Oaths of Douglas Powell and Middleton Shaw two of the witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded and on the motion of the said Exors. certificate is granted them for obtaining a Probate in due form.

Test. Ster Clack, Cir Cur.

Brunswick Co. Will Book 2 - 1739-1785, p. 91.

Note: I would like to explain the early counties of Virginia, to show where our Brewer's exactly lived. Brunswick County was formed in 1720. The parent county or Territory from which it was organized was Prince George, Isle of Wight, and before that, Surrey. The county seat was Lawrenceville. Prince George, created 1702, was made out of Charles City. County seat was Charles City.

## HOWELL BREWER

In George Brewer's will we find that Howell Brewer was co-executor with his stepmother, Alice Burwell Brewer. Apparently he was of age, because he witnessed a deed in Brunswick Co. in 1743. Howell Brewer, SR. had left the state leaving his wife, Rebecca Brewer and young children behind. Eventually she joined him. (Ct. Or. Bk. 3, 1745-49, p. 191.)

Howell had a suit of trespass, assault and battery against him by Charles Collier. He admitted the offense, but the case was dropped. September 4, a Court case reveals an attachment against him for a debt, however he was privately removed so that process could not be served against him for the 41 shillings and four pence.

Howell is later found in Bladen Co. NC in 1749. Here he received a grant of 200 acres on the northeast side of Deep River in 1754. The Moore Co. NC tax list records him in 1755 with Henry Brewer. He sold his 200 acres on both sides of Deep River to Zachariah Green on August 29, 1758. (Book C. p. 138). He signed both transactions.

Howell seems to leave a bad reputation wherever he lives, and finds himself in trouble with the law. In Orange Co. NC, 1752, we find a case of John Williams vs. Howell Brewer. Then William Spruce vs. Howell Brewer for debt. In the February Court of 1765 he was sued by Nathaniel Edwards, and in that year Charles Saxon was appointed Overseer of Road in place of Howell Brewer.

Howell protests the high recording fees in a petition to the Governor & Council in 1768, and he and Nicklas Brewer are listed in Colonial and State Records in NC, Vol. VII, pp. 733-6. Howell served in the Chatham Co. Militia in 1772 under Captain Joab Brooks's Co. A list of signatures requesting a central location for Randolph Co. NC, public buildings list Howell Brewer, Sr., and Jr., along with Isaac Brewer and Reuben Brewer. It is assumed that Rebecca and children had joined Howell by 1746.

The Revolutionary War Pension record of Isaac Brewer gives some important facts about his family. His father was Howell Brewer, who was from NC, but lived in Wilkes Co. GA, when Isaac was born in 1763; then they moved to Bedford Co. VA when Isaac was 4 or 5 years old. Then they moved to Chatham CO. NC and lived there until Isaac was 25 -26 years old. George Brewer was a younger brother of Isaac.

According to Ben Brewer's information sent to him by Mae Stevenson of her 1957 research summary: Howell Brewer lived to be 93 years old and died in Owsley Co. KY. His children included James Brewer, Orville Brewer, Ambrose Brewer (Our line), Polly Brewer, and Howell P. Brewer.<sup>16</sup>

Mrs. Janice B. Reddin of Findlay, Ohio has spent considerable time doing research on the Brewer family. In the history of Moore County, NC Court Records for the period 1784-1795, said that Ambrose, Drury, Linea and Micajob Brewer were residents of the county about the 1790s. Then in the History of Moore, CO., NC, Appendage B, p. 194, under topic "Permanent 18th Century Settlers", it states that Howell (Dutchman) Brewer was at Deep River in 1754. George Brewer was there by 1777, and Ambrose Brewer by 1787. It also reveals the Seals living in Moore Co. from 1766-1789, after which they moved to TN, also.

Following is information on Howell and his wives: Howell Brewer, born ca 1723 in Surry Co., VA, married #1 Rebecca Willis, died 1756. #2 Marion May, daughter of John May, died in Western TN.

#### Children:

1. Howell Brewer, born 1740s, Randolph Co., NC.
2. Ambrose, born ca 1753 in Brunswick Co., VA Died 1855 in Hancock Co., TN. (Our line).
3. Ann Brewer, born 1753-4, married Joseph Moon.

---

<sup>16</sup>The Long Brewer Line, Ben R. Brewer



4. James Brewer, born ca 1755.
5. Orville Brewer, born ca 1757.
6. Polly Brewer, born ca 1759.
7. Isaac Brewer, born 1764.
8. William Brewer
9. John Brewer
10. Henry Brewer
11. Simon Brewer, born 1775.

#### AMBROSE BREWER

The following record was given to me by a cousin, Geneva Hopkins, in Sneedville, TN. She is the Register Clerk in Hancock County Courthouse, that gave me over 30 pages of Brewer data. The researcher of this material was Mrs. Janice B. Reddin, contributed by Nova M. Mertens, of Indianapolis, IN.

"The founder of the family in which this work is interested was Ambrose Brewer. He lived in what is now Catawba County, NC, born about 1760. He served under Colonel Cleveland at the "Battle of Kings Mountain", October 7, 1789, Revolutionary War. Soon after this he moved over the mountains and settled on War Creek, in what is now Hancock County, TN. He was one of the first settlers of the locality. He was a Freemason. He had a wife and a son, Joab, at this time".

Tradition in one branch of the family has reported Ambrose to have 12 boys. The 1830 Census of Hawkins County, TN show him with a family of young children which suggests that he may have reared a second family.<sup>17</sup>

Following is an article written by George A. Williams, October 4, 1924, published in the News-Sentinel, Treadway, TN. (Courtesy of Alton L. Greene, Sanger, TX).

"Few persons outside of the Masonic fraternity knew that the first Freemason who ever came to Hancock County, lies buried on the farm of Thomas Wilder, in the 2nd District of Hancock County, three miles north of Treadway. He was buried beside his two slaves.

---

<sup>17</sup>The Ambrose Brewer Family, 1753--1855., by James F. Boxman.

Soon after the "Battle of Kings Mountain", one Ambrose Brewer, who was a Freemason, and a private under Colonel Cleveland in the memorable battle, made his way into what is now Hancock County, and settled on War Creek, three miles north of where Treadway is now located.

Ambrose Brewer, then in his twenties, was a relative of the writer, and left many descendants in Hancock County, who are among the best citizens of the county, and are well known for their honesty and integrity.

Mr. Brewer was a very enthusiastic Whig, before and after the Revolutionary War, and did his part towards freeing this country from the British Yoke. In doing his duty as an American Soldier, he incurred the hatred and ill will of the numerous Tories that infected that part of NC where he lived, (Catawba County). Shortly after the "Battle of Kings Mountain" in which he took a conspicuous part, he crossed the mountains into what is now Tennessee and stayed about one year. Then he returned to his own home and brought back his young wife and son Joab, and lived to a ripe old age in what is now Hancock County.

He came at a time when the Indians roamed this country unmolested, when the wild game of the mountains feared not the crack of the hunter's gun, when his only neighbors were the Indians, the owls, deer, wild turkey and other wild creatures, and built him a log cabin of the rudest kind on War Creek. By some means, he obtained a large tract of land along this creek at a time when land was worth very little. The lands along the creek were full of swamps, mosquitoes, and malaria.

Ambrose was a Freemason, had been a Mason in NC or some other place. It is regretted that his parent lodge is not known to the writer, who is indebted to W.H. Smith; who lived to a great age and died at Treadway several years ago. Mr. Smith was a distant relative of Mr. Brewer and also a Master Mason and a member of Sneedville Lodge No. 277, F. & A.M. He vouched that Mr. Brewer was a Mason, and stated that he had seen Mr. Brewer with receipts for lodge dues and a traveling card; but the name and number of the lodge is unknown to the writer. He will be remembered by Masons in Hancock County for many years after his death. The Masons decorated his grave each year when the flowers bloomed.

If Mr. Ambrose Brewer lived here at the time the Indians were here is positively known by many of the oldest relatives, whom are numerous in Hancock county. Some of them relate that a battle between the Whites and the Indians took place on the high lands of Mr. Brewer; (War Creek probably received it's name from the Indian Battles), and on a high ridge on the farm owned by W. H. Greene of Treadway; which is a part of the lands once owned by Mr. Brewer. It is yet plainly



visible, the deep trenches used by the White soldiers in a battle on the farm and in the low grounds and swamps along the bottoms of Mr. Greene. Several years ago a deep ditch or drain was dug up at a depth of two and three feet. In the trenches, which protected the Whites on the ridge, many arrow heads of flint were found. This proves that the Whites were entrenched on the hill and the Indians were down in the swamps in the low grounds where the battle was fought.

It is deeply regretted that more is not known of Mr. Brewer's Masonic connections. It may be that at one time he affiliated with some of the lodges of TN. Most all of the older Masons of Hancock County, who could throw a light on the subject, are long since dead. The lodge at Sneedville has been destroyed. The only data at hand was obtained from the late W. H. Smith. A relative of Mr. Smith remembered that Mr. Brewer was recognized as a Mason and as the first to come to Hancock County. He came when there was no lodge in or about Hancock County. He was a Freemason at a time when Freemasons were few in number and far between. Brother Brewer sleeps in Hancock County among the unnumbered dead. The sunshine and the wind pass over him. He is neither disturbed nor delighted. His spirit has entered that celestial lodge on high, not made with hands, eternally in the heavens. Peace to his ashes."

Ambrose Brewer was listed in the 1830 Hawkins County census records: 111000001-121001. He is a Revolutionary War Patriot. Descendants proving lineage can get into S.A.R. and D.A.R through Orlene Trent, Zana Seals, Nancy Brewer, on back. Following is an article given to me by Geneva Hopkins that enabled me to find out about our Brewer relatives. I wrote Mrs. Claris Barrett in Booneville, KY. She was responsible for the erection of a Revolutionary War headstone on our grand father, Ambrose Brewer's grave in Hancock County, TN. Claris also sent me a picture of the headstone at Ambrose's grave. I would like to include this article which follows:

#### MARKER PLACED ON GRAVE OF AMBROSE BREWER

"On Friday, July 4th, John and Farris Brewer; Don and Jean Westever; Daniel, Peggy and Michell Barrett; Renee Creech, Monroe and Claris Barrett; R.B. Pearl and grandson Bobby McCollum; Gertrude and Robert Strong; Bruce and Marjarie Barker; Judy Bell; Theodore and Dianna Brewer, joined by Gregory, Yvonne and Marie Hudley of Berea and Nicholas and Belma Brewer of Baxter made a trip to Sneedville, TN, where they joined with the descendants of Joab Brewer to dedicate and place a stone marker on the grave of their ancestor, gr. gr. gr. grandfather, AMBROSE BREWER., who was a Rev. War soldier and is buried on War Creek in Hancock Co., TN. The plaque for the marker was furnished by the "Three Forks" Chapter of the DAR of Beattyville, KY., of which Claris Barrett is a member. The stone, dates and names was furnished by Searcy and Strong Funeral Home.

A beautiful pot luck dinner was enjoyed by everyone after it was spread on tables on the lawns of Miss Naomi Brewer of Sneedville.





HANCOCK COUNTY COURTHOUSE, SNEEDVILLE, TN.



GRAVE OF MY FOURTH  
GREAT GRANDFATHER,  
AMEROSE BREWER, AN  
AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY  
WAR SOLDIER. BURIED AT  
WAR CREEK ON A LITTLE  
KNOLL ON THE SIDE OF THE  
MOUNTAIN CLOSE TO MACK  
BREWER'S PLACE. HANCOCK  
COUNTY, TN. AMEROSE WAS  
A MASON.



The 4th of July is reunion day for Naomi and her distant cousins who joined her to make this a day to remember. Although most were strangers at first, family ties and connections soon began to appear and in a very short time it was just like one big family - all asking questions and seeking more information about the Brewer clan. Bill Brewer and his wife, from Loudon, TN made a visit and were a real delight and pleasure to everyone. Kay Brewer and her sister-in-law came from Norwood, Ohio to assist Claris Barrett in the DAR ceremony of dedication.

The Rev. Carl Greene, pastor of the War Creek Baptist Church called and extended an invitation to use the church for the dedication of the stone due to inclement weather that made it's unwelcome visit on and off all day. Rev. Greene is also a descendant of Ambrose Brewer, and helped in the ceremony. Theodore sang the patriotic song "America", afterwards Renne Creech played "Taps". Nicholas Brewer gave a brief history of Claris and her ancestors which entitled her to membership in the DAR. Jean Westever made a short talk about the Brewers and traced them back to the "Blue Bloods of England " and displayed pictures of monuments and markers for all to see that wished to.

Most everyone then made the trip up War Creek to the home of Mack Brewer which is near the place where Ambrose is buried along with two of his slaves. The grave is on a little knoll on the side of the mountain and overlooks fields and meadows owned and fought for by the Brewers and the Indians. Rain made it impossible for even a four wheel drive vehicle to climb the hill, although Mack Brewer had used a bull dozer to make a road to the grave. So the stone was placed on a platform made by Dallas and Moore Brewer and carried up the hill.

Brewer descendants from three of Ambroses' sons joined in the effort to carry the stone up the hill and it turned out to be an EFFORT with capital letters. Amid cheers and applause from those who had already climbed the hill, the stone was placed on the ground near the head of the grave. The stone was placed and leveled at the head of the grave by Robert Strong and Daniel Marriett, as were two stones that were taken for the slaves. A son of Dallas Brewer read a short history about Ambrose; when he came to TN, when he died and that he was the first Mason to come to Hancock County, and about the battles he had with the Indians which gave War Creek it's name. He also said the Masons used to go to the grave when the wild flowers were in bloom and decorate it and keep it clean.

Grandpa Ambrose would have been greatly pleased to have seen the display of love and friendship among his descendants and also the dedicated and determined effort they displayed in making this a memorable day in history of the illustrious Brewer clan.

Praise should go to Naomi Brewer, her sisters and brothers for the display of hospitality and the work and many phone calls she made to make this all possible; the Three Forks Chapter of the DAR, and especially to Annis Justice and to the Searcy and Strong Funeral Home; but more especially to each and everyone who joined in to help in this endeavor.

The Howell Cobb Brewer family reunion is held the last Sunday in each June at the Owsley County, KY., Sportsmen Club Grounds in Booneville, KY. Everyone is invited."

The above was written by Monroe E. Barrett, Route one, box 190, Booneville, KY. 41314.

#### ANCESTOR'S REVOLUTIONARY WAR SERVICES

Ambrose Brewer volunteered as a Ranger or Scout in the War. He was with scouting parties from the commencement of the War until peace was declared. He was never attached to the main body of the army but was in several skirmishes with the enemy as a Ranger, in which capacity he acted during the war, and his position was most of the time in Moore, NC. He served under the following named officers: Capt. Tabb, Capt. Maburn, Capt. Thurogood, Col. Litrell and Major (Micajah) Lewis, the latter named colonel (or major) was killed in a skirmish with the enemy. He served at different times altogether two years or more.

Statement taken from National Archives, Pension File, Brewer, Ambrose, N.C. R1182.

He served under Colonel Cleveland at the Battle of Kings Mountain, October 7, 1780, Rev. War, A History of the Hamblen and Allied Families, Hamblen (Franklin, 1940) p. 207.

Ambrose Brewer, born ca 1753, Brunswick co., VA. died after 1855, in Hancock Co. TN. He applied for Revolutionary War Pension in 1855. He was in Hawkins Co. TN, 1816, in Claiborne Co. TN. in 1840 with his son Joab. His first wife was Oma Richardson, whom he married ca 1780 in Cumberland Co. NC. Date of her death not known. It is believed he then married \_\_\_\_\_ Russell.

Children of Ambrose Brewer:

1. Joab Brewer, born 1780-90.
2. Fredrick Brewer.
3. Howell Cobb Brewer, born October 20, 1790, died April 19, 1886 in Owsley Co., KY. He married #1 in Moore Co., NC, Nancy Short on September 10, 1810. She died April 22, 1834; (Our Line). Howell then married #2 Mary Cope,



on September 12, 1834. She died June 16, 1837. He then married #3, Polly Wolfe, in Hawkins Co., TN.

4. Prettyman Brewer, born 1790s.
5. Ambrose Brewer, born 1798.
6. Millenton Brewer, born ca 1800.
7. Pleasant Brewer, born ca 1800.
8. Lucinda Brewer.
9. Oma Brewer.
10. George Brewer.

#### HOWELL COBB BREWER

This is the last Brewer ancestor I will be covering, as I listed Nancy Brewer Seale, Howell Cobb Brewer's daughter, in the Seale Chapter. Howell Cobb Brewer was born in Moore County, NC, October 20, 1790. He died in Sturgeon, Owsley County, KY, April 19, 1886. He married Nancy Short in Moore County, NC, September 10, 1810. She died in Hawkins County, TN, April 22, 1834. Howell Cobb had 11 children by his first wife, Nancy Short.<sup>18</sup>

##### Children:

1. Joab Brewer
2. Ambrose Brewer, born 1815, married #1 Susan Cope,  
#2 Lucinda Swaringer.
3. Nancy Brewer, born 1816, married July 4, 1832, Samuel  
Seale. (Our Line).
4. Mary Polly Brewer, born 1818, married Micajah Cope.
5. Howell P. Brewer, born 1826, married Elizabeth Barger.
6. Sarah "Sally" Brewer, born 1823, married James Elrod.
7. James M. Brewer, born 1825, married #1\_\_\_? #2\_\_\_#3Mrs.  
Rose W. Helton.

---

<sup>18</sup>The Ambrose Brewer Family, by James F. Bowman.

8. George Brewer
9. William Brewer, born 1829, married #1 Elizabeth Cole, #2 Mary Polly Neeley.
10. Orville Brewer, born 1831, married Marinda Bowling.
11. Martha "Patsy" Brewer, born 1834, married Sylvester Isaacs.

Howell then married his second wife, name not known, in Hawkins Co. TN, September 12, 1834. No children were born to this union and she died June 16, 1837. He then married #3, Mary Polly Wolfe, in Hawkins County, TN, September 3, 1838. She was born in TN in 1800, and died at Sturgeon, Owsley County, KY, June 2, 1896. She was the daughter of George and Polly\_\_\_Wolfe. Howell's children by this marriage are:

12. Nicholas Wolfe Brewer, born 1839, married Mary A. Hudson.
13. John Tyler Brewer, born 1840, married Martha Culton.
14. Valentine Sevier Brewer, born 1842, married #1, Sarah Wilson, #2, Louisa Deeds.
15. Morris Brewer, born 1846, married Lucy Wilson.
16. Emily Juelma Brewer, born 1848, married Daniel McCollum, Jr.

Following is a Biographical sketch of Howell Cobb Brewer at Home, Owsley County, KY, August 13, 1885, that was given to Rev. Ealan P. Brewer:

Howell Brewer, age 94 years, nine months and thirteen days, was born in the State of NC, Moore County, on Dup River, in the year of our Lord, October 20, 1790. Married there on the 10 of September 1810. Emigrated from there to Hawkins Co. TN in 1814, then 24 years old.

"Me and my wife had twelve children, one born in NC. We lived together about 24 years and in the year 1834, April 22, she died.. Then enters the second wife, the 12 of September 1834. I had no children by her. She died June 16, 1837. She lay about 16 months of that time. She was scarcely able to walk alone.

On September 3, 1838, I married my third wife. We had five children. Four sons and one daughter and we and all of my first



wife's children are still living. I raised eleven of my first wife's and five of my last wife's children to man and womanhood, which makes sixteen in all and I never had to part with any of them.

I joined the Missionary Baptist Church in the year of 1832 and have lived in my duty most of my life. I have been in public life, Civil and Military, upwards of fifty years. I had two sons that volunteered in the Florida War and served six months. Then I had two sons that went into the war with Mexico and served until peace was made. At the commencement of the late war, I had nine sons living; out of the nine, six entered the Federal Army. Five of whom served three years. I finished in the late war, sons, sons-in-law, grandsons, the fifth part of Captains Company, (20).

I have lived to see the fourth and might say the fifth generation. I have 133 grandchildren now living, and great grandchildren, I might say 200.

"I immigrated from East Tennessee in the year of 1848 to Owsley County, KY, and have lived here since."

Written by V. S. Brewer, August 13, 1885.

Howell Cobb Brewer was Justice of the Peace in Hawkins County, Tennessee from 1830 until 1842, and probably before and after these dates. He also served for an unknown period in the same office in Owsley County, KY.

List of deeds, recorded in Hawkins County, Rogersville, TN.

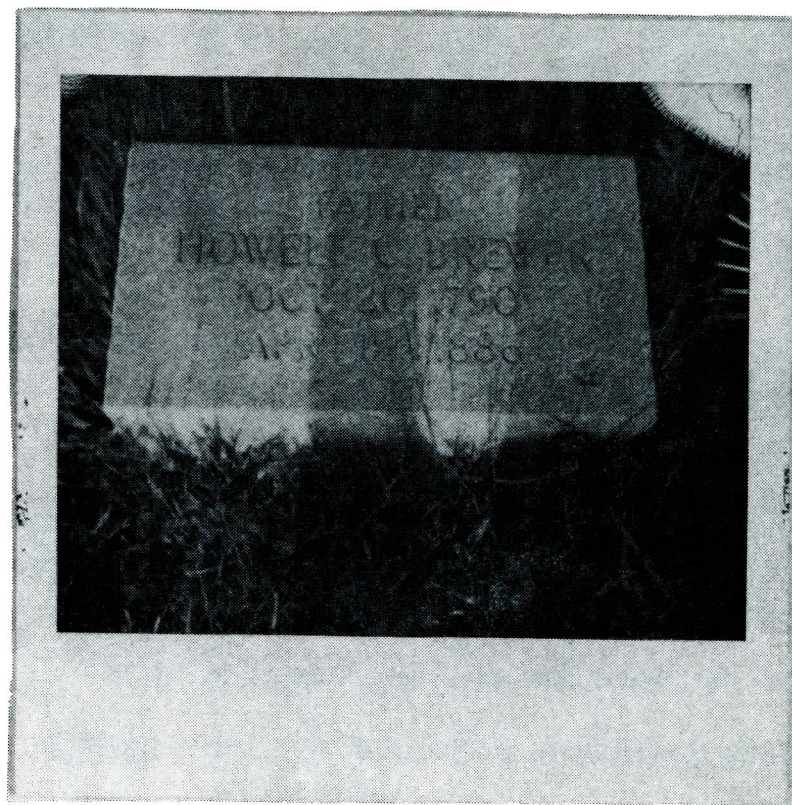
August 6, 1839, Howell Brewer to Samuel Seals, 30 acres (18-371)

Howell Brewer: Males: two under 5, one 5-10, one 10-15, two 15-20, one 30-40. Females: one 5-10, two 10-15, one 30-40.

1830 Hawkins County Census: Brewer, Howell  
211201012001.

I have a picture of Howell Cobb Brewer's grave headstone marker, sent to me by Claris Brewer Barrett, of Booneville, KY. She is a descendant of one of his children. I hope to attend the Brewer reunion and visit the graves of Howell Cobb Brewer, and then go down to War Creek Baptist Church and visit Ambrose Brewer's grave. We have a cousin, Evelyn Brewer Wolfe, that lives on the old Brewer homestead. Mother, (Myrtle Marie Amyx), went to visit Evelyn and her mother, Leona Brewer in the 1960s. I have talked to Evelyn Wolfe two or three times, and she

thought the world of Mother. Evelyn said they enjoyed Mother immensely; and that they just talked and laughed when Mother was there.





## LANIER COAT OF ARMS

*The origin of this Arms is the Crusades, and the Cross called an "honorable ordinary" is a part of the Crusading emblem. Each square represents a year spent in the Crusade by one of the ancestors. The symbol of nobility is found in the squares. The border is also an "honorable ordinary." The falcon is a "cantling" or heraldic pun or play on the name. The symbol of bravery is found in the lion from the Lion of Gascony of the family residence. Truth is found in the blue arms, loyalty in the silver and strength and purity in the gold.*





FIRST CHURCH ESTABLISHED IN THE FIRST  
SETTLEMENT, JAMESTOWN, VIRGINIA, 1607.

OUR LANIER FAMILY SETTLED IN ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY, WHICH  
ORIGINALLY WAS SURREY COUNTY. ISLE OF WIGHT LATER BECAME  
PRINCE GEORGE COUNTY, AND EVENTUALLY BRUNSWICK COUNTY.  
SARAH LANIER OF CHARLES CITY, MARRIED GEORGE BREWER.  
THIS PICTURE WAS TAKEN NEW YEAR'S DAY OF 1992 ON A HIS-  
TORICAL TRIP WITH ROY, LAURA, MARK, AND SAVANNAH.



## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

## LANIER FAMILY

Excited is an under-statement when I got The Long Brewer Line, by Ben R. Brewer, and discovered the Huguenot family that I had been looking for. Our Lanier family is from France, an aristocratic, distinguished, educated family. They were musicians for the king and queens of France and England for three generations. The Laniers were also French Huguenots who fled to England; therefore, they were English Huguenots rather than American Huguenots. However, our immediate Lanier Grandsire immigrated to Virginia in the 1600s. This enables us to become members of the VA. Branch of the Huguenot Society.

What is a Huguenot? The Funk and Wagnall's Standard Dictionary, International Edition states: A French Protestant of the 16th and 17th Centuries: Persecuted during the religious wars of the time.

The Collier's Encyclopedia gives this information: French Protestants in the 16th and 17th centuries. The origin of the word is obscure. It may have been a local nickname given to the Protestants of Tours, who were believed to meet near the gate of the mythical King Huguet or Hugon. The first Huguenots were often regarded as Lutherans; there is no doubt, however, that a strong evangelical movement existed in France during the early decades of the 16th century, independent of the German Reformation. The new church grew rapidly, in spite of official opposition to it and of the dubious outcome of Colloquy of Poissy in 1561, which failed to establish a policy of religious freedom or tolerance.

From 1562 to 1598, French Catholics and Huguenots fought each other in a succession of violent encounters. The Catholics had organized the Holy League with the support of Spain, and the Protestants, while professing an absolute loyalty to the king, constituted a theocracy under the leadership, successively, of Louis I, de Bourbon, Prince de Conde'; Gaspard II de Coligny; and Henry of Navarre. The civil disorders culminated in the massacre of a great number of Protestants throughout the entire kingdom, on August 23-24, 1572, the eve of St. Bartholomew's Day. The definitive victory of Henry of Navarre over the League, followed by his accession to the throne of France under the name of Henry IV, in 1594, marked the end of the struggle. He adopted Catholicism for political reasons, but the Edict of Nantes in 1598 granted the following to the Huguenots: private worship and liberty of conscience throughout France; public worship in about 200 towns and 3,000 castles; financial support from the state to Protestant schools and ministers; legalized publication of Protestant books; full civil and political rights, with freedom to trade, inherit property, enter all schools, and serve in both local and national parliaments; special courts, les chambres d'edit, with both Catholic and Protestant members to deal with disputes concerning Protestants; free assembly to handle judicial functions; and the control of about 200 towns and cities for eight years (later extended).

During the reign of Louis XIII, Cardinal Richelieu undertook to recall the privileges of the Protestants, and they lost all political power with the loss of La Rochelle in 1628, though they retained most civil liberties. Louis XIV initiated a policy of forced conversion, and soldiers were billeted in



Protestant homes until the inhabitants would embrace the king's religion. The Edict of Nantes was revoked on October 18, 1685, and Huguenots emigrated in large numbers to England, the Netherlands, Germany, and America. French communities were founded in New York, Massachusetts, Virginia, and the Carolinas. In France, Protestant beliefs continued even after the emigration. The Huguenots were now mostly middle-class tradesmen and artisans. Though persecution continued intermittently, the general official attitude during the eighteenth century was one of indifference. The Edict of Toleration, 1787, restored their civil liberties and Napoleon I granted them state subsidies in return for state control of their church. In 1905 all churches were separated from the state; but the Huguenots in France have continued, despite factional differences, to grow in number and now make up a small but industrious and influential group.

### OUR ANCESTORS, THE HUGUENOTS IN FRANCE

The Huguenots as we all know, were French Protestants. Protestantism was introduced into France during the Reformation. Protestantism was accepted in France by many members of the nobility, by people engaged in intellectual pursuits and by members of the middle class--particularly those having special competencies in the professions, trades and handicrafts. Protestantism was a solid, conservative movement of notable respectability on the part of many of the most responsible and most accomplished people in France.

The Huguenot Church grew rapidly. At its first synod in 1559, fifteen churches were represented. Over two thousand churches sent representatives to the Huguenot Church synod in 1561. In the beginning the new religion was respected, and the Huguenots were greatly favored by Francis I, because of their standing and abilities. Later, however, Francis I, for political reasons, turned against them, and they experienced alternately high favor and outrageous persecution. France was ninety percent Roman Catholic, and heresy was viewed by the man in the street, as treason against God. Clashes occurred repeatedly, and frequently erupted into open warfare on a grand scale.

However, it is to be recognized that economic considerations also influenced Huguenot persecution. The Huguenots were workers. With hard common sense they realized that they must produce what they consumed. They would give work to a beggar, but never alms. Even Richelieu, the so-called "Nemesis of the Huguenots", forbidding them to leave France, was quoted as saying, "They are workers, France needs them." It has been said that Lafayette, himself a Roman Catholic, was greatly impressed by the fact that so many of the American leaders were of Huguenot ancestry, and that upon returning to France, he urged an Edict of Toleration upon Louis XVI. However, by the time of the Edict of Toleration, the Huguenot emigrants, with few exceptions, had raised families and sunk their roots so deeply in other lands as to prevent their return to France.

### EMIGRATION TO THE AMERICAN COLONIES

Huguenot settlers immigrated into the American Colonies directly from France and indirectly from the Protestant countries of Europe. This immigration began at an early date--before the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes--and continued for over one hundred years. Although the Huguenots settled along almost the entire eastern coast of North America, they showed a preference for what are now the States of Massachusetts, New York, Pennsylvania, Virginia and South Carolina. Just as France suffered a notable loss through emigration of the intelligent, capable Huguenots, so the



American Colonies gained through their immigration. The colonists who had already settled North America were mostly farmers, laborers, ministers, soldiers, sailors and people who had been engaged in government. The Huguenots were able to supply the colonies with some excellent physicians and a large number of expert artisans and craftsmen; for example, Irenee Dupont, who had learned from the immortal Lavoisier how to make gunpowder; and the goldsmith, Apollon Rivoire, the father of Paul Revere, who created silver articles which will be treasured as long as our civilization lasts, and church bells which ring in New England today; who also did prodigious things with copper, and displayed outstanding ability as an industrial organizer, whose place in history is assured because he once rode a horse!

Moreover, the Huguenots adapted themselves readily to the New World, and showed an astonishing propensity for marrying people who were not Huguenots. Their descendants increased rapidly and spread quickly throughout the American Colonies. Today, people of Huguenot origin are found in all parts of our Country.<sup>19</sup>

The LANIER family is an interesting family with an interesting history. Several people have researched and written about the Lanier's. Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine, Vols, III, VI and VII, VA Magazine of History and Biog. Vol. XV, p. 77, Vols, XV, XXIX, and Louise Ingersoll's book, LANIER. Then of course, Ben R. Brewer has a chapter about the Laniers in his book. Louise Ingersoll's book is a genealogy of the Lanier family who came to Virginia and their French Ancestors of London. She spent twenty years in research. Her main objective was to find the correct English Ancestry of the immigrants who came Virginia.

LANIER derived, probably from the ancient French language meaning "Falcon". It could have originated from the word "lanier" or "lanner", a word used in hawking. It has been found spelled several ways: Lanyier, Lanere, Laner, Lanyear, Lanear, Laniere, and Lanier.

The Laniers are of French descent and originally come from Gascony, the southern most part of France. One famous American Lanier was Sidney Lanier, the poet. The Laniers were Protestants in France, and were involved in the persecution which reached it's peak in 1572 with the massacre of St. Bartholomew. The Lanier family fled to London, and the records of the Huguenot Society of London have them on record. They were in London for three generations before coming to America, so they are Huguenots to London, rather than Huguenots to America.

### NICHOLAS LANIER

Our first Lanier generation begins with Nicholas Lanier in the Courts of King Henry II of France, Queen Elizabeth and King James of England. This was a family of musicians and the ancestor of our American Laniers. Nicholas Lanier's proof of service to Henry II is found in the "Chantres et autres Jouers of d'instruments" of the French King's Chambers for the years of 1559-1560. Nicholas served in the Court of Henry II of France and the Court of Queen Elizabeth and King James of England. Nicholas married ca 1565 to Lucrece and they had six sons, all musicians of the Royal Family, and four daughters; and two of them married musicians. Nicholas later had at least eight or more

---

<sup>19</sup>The Huguenot Society of America, 1883-1963, p.14-17.

grandsons to become members of the Royal Orchestra. Three generations served the Royal Family. Nicholas Lanier was named Musician of the Flutes in 1604.

The Will Abstract of Nicholas was dated January 28, 1611-12, and proved July 1612, in the Rochester XIX, folio 514. To my wife Lucrece, all my lands and goods; to sons John, Alphonse, Innocent, Jerome, Clement, 12 shillings; to Andrea 20 pounds if he does not have my place; my four daughters, three of whom are unmarried, I leave to the discretion of my wife Lucrece, my sole EX. Lucrece Lanier was buried in east Greenwich, January 4, 1633-4. Her will is recorded in the Rochester Register XXII, folio 105.

Children: Most were musicians and married musicians.

1. John Lanier, born 1565, will dated November 21, 1616, proved December 21, 1616. Married October 17, 1585 Frances, daughter of Mark Anthony Galliardello and Margerie Galliardello. John Lanier was buried in the Chancel of Camberwell Church near his mother-in-law. John had a son, Nicholas Lanier, who became very prominent. His portrait was painted by Vandyke and by Livensz. The portrait of Nicholas Lanier by Vandyck was painted in Genoa, Italy in 1632. Nicholas was sent abroad by the King in 1625 to purchase paintings, statues, and fine art. During the Civil War, many of the King's fine art pieces were sold at auction. Many of the Laniers bought these paintings, of which Nicholas bought his own portrait by Van Dyck. His uncles, Jerome and Clement Lanier (Our line) also bought pieces of the art collection. The Civil War was responsible for the loss of many fortunes, the Laniers included. However, after following the Stewarts into exile, the Laniers were returned to their high position. Children were: Mark Anthony, John, Francis; and daughters, Lucretia, Elizabeth, and Judith.<sup>20</sup>
2. Alphonse Lanier, died November 1613, and married Amelia. He had a son, Henry Lanier.
3. Innocent Lanier, died early 1625.
4. Jerome Lanier, buried December 1, 1659. Married Phrisdiswith Grafton.
5. Clement Lanier. (Our line)
6. Andrea Lanier, married Joyce Perry.
7. Ellen Lanier, burried August 3, 1638, married Alphonse Ferrabosco.
8. Frances Lanier, married Thomas Foxe, February 4, 1618.

---

<sup>20</sup>The Long Brewer Line



9. Mary Lanier, buried October 13, 1676.
10. Katherine Lanier, died before September 2, 1660, married Daniel Farrand.

### CLEMENT LANIER

Our second Lanier generation ancestor is Clement Lanier, Gentleman of the King's Chamber, fifth child of Nicholas, Sr., and Lucrece Lanier. Clement, also a musician, played the flute. He married March 1628 at St. Margaret Lee, to Hanna Collet. Clement and Hanna had eleven children, 8 of them registered in a book of Greenwich in the St. Alphege Parish. The Virginia Lanier immigrants descend from Clement and Hannah Collet. Their son John Lanier is the ancestor who immigrated and is our immediate line.<sup>21</sup>

#### Children of Clement:

1. Hannah Lanier, married November 16, 1665, Thomas Swetnam.
2. Lionel Lanier, baptized February 17, 1643-4, buried September 19, 1665.
3. John Lanier, born October 1631 in Lewisham. (Our line).
4. Nicholas Lanier, died in 1665.
5. William Lanier
6. Frances Lanier
7. Elizabeth Lanier
8. Susanna Lanier
9. Lucretia Lanier
10. Charles Lanier
11. Robert Lanier

Following is the Will Abstract of Clement Lanier:

Dated February 1658-9, proved December 3, 1661, registered May 20, 1662. The house and forty pounds are left to Clement's oldest daughter, Hannah Lanier. Money was left to Nicholas, Lionel, William, and Frances. Elizabeth and Susannah were to receive money when they came of age or married. Lucretia and Charles have previously died. Money was left to John and Robert Lanier.

---

<sup>21</sup>Ibid. p. 81.

Clement was preceded in death by his wife, Hannah. Her death is recorded at St. Alphege as Mrs. Lanier, buried December 22, 1653. Clement Lanier was buried beside his wife November 6, 1661 in East Greenwich.

### JOHN LANIER, S R.

Our third Lanier generation ancestor, John Lanier, Sr., was born ca. October 1631 in Lewisham, and died ca. 1683 in Charles City Co., VA. He married ca. 1650 in England. John Lanier and Lucrece Lanier were transported by Howell Pryce along with 45 other persons. Record can be found about John Lanier and John Woodlief being sent by the men of the Southside of James River to see Governor Berkeley about defense against the Indians. John Lanier Sr., and his son, John Jr. were Rebels who took part in Bacon's Rebellion. The elder Lanier represented the people of Charles City to the Governor, and the younger Lanier joined the fighting forces.<sup>22</sup>

Children of John Lanier, Sr.:

1. John Lanier, Jr., born 1655
2. Katherine Lanier, died May 7, 1665.

### JOHN LANIER, JR.

Our fourth generation Lanier ancestor, John Lanier, Jr. born 1655 in England to John and Lucrece. He died ca 1717-19, in Brunswick Co. VA. He married first in 1677 in Charles City County, VA. He married Sarah Edmunds, a widow, ca 1685.<sup>23</sup>

Children of John Lanier, Jr.:

1. Robert Lanier, born 1678 in Charles City, died ca 1756, married Priscilla Washington, daughter of Richard Washington and Elizabeth Washington. Will recorded May 18, 1756. (Records in Surrey County).
2. John Lanier, III., born 1680, Charles City, married Elizabeth Bird, daughter of Thomas Bird
3. Sampson Lanier, born 1682, Charles City, married Elizabeth Washington ca 1724, daughter of Richard and Elizabeth Washington.

The following were children by John Jr's., second wife, Sarah Edmunds:

4. Sarah Lanier, born ca 1684-6, Charles City, married George Brewer. (Our line). See Brewer Chapter.

<sup>22</sup>Ibid. p. 82.

<sup>23</sup>Lanier, by Louise Ingersoll, p. 378.



5. Nicholas Lanier, born ca 1690, Charles City, married Mary\_\_\_?

VA. Magazine of History and Biography, p. 333 records John Lanier on the Quit Rent rolls of 1704 with 700 acres in Prince George County.

Lanier, John . . . . . Virginia . . . . . 1676  
1883 - The Huguenot Society of America - 1963 p. 56.

Will of John Lanier:

In The Name of God Amen: I, John Lanier, in the County of Price George, being very weak and ailing in Body, but in perfect mind and memory, thanks be given unto God, therefore it is appointed for all men once to dye, I do make and ordain this my last will and testament that is to say principally and first of all, I give and bequeath my soul into the hands of God that gave it, and for my body I commend it to the Earth to be buried in a Christian Like and Decent manner, to the Discretion of my Executor, nothing doubting but at the general resurrection, I shall receive the same again, by the mighty power of God, and as touching such Worldly Estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, devise and dispose of the same in the manner and form.

First, I give to my son Robert Lanier, one Shilling.

Secondly, I give to my son John Lanier, one Shilling.

Thirdly, I give to my son Sampson Lanier, one Shilling.

Fourthly, I give to my Daughter, Sarah Brewer one cow or heifer of three years old.

Fifthly, I give to my grandson John Lanier, the son of Nicholas Lanier my son, a feather bed and bolster and blankets and rugs all new and good and a small gun well fixt, and I give to him two pewter dishes and basin and one chest with lock and key and six spoons, one iron pot, and pothooks and frying pan and a small pair of steelyards and two combs and a young horse of three years old, and three sheep.

Lastly, I give to my son Nicholas Lanier, all the land which I now live upon, and all my land on the Otterdams, to him and his heirs forever, and I give to my son Nicholas all my movable and immovable. I do make my son, Nicholas Lanier, my whole and sole Exor. of this my last Will and Testament, to see that it is performed as Witness by hand and seal this the 5th day of January 1717.

Probated April 14, 1719, in Prince George County.

John Lanier (Sealed with red wax)

Witnesses:

William Peebles

Henry Peebles

Thomas Burrow

At a Court held at Merchantshope for the County of Prince George on the second of Tuesday in April being the 14th day of the said month Anno. Dom. 1719.

The above written Last will and testament of John Lanier, deceased, was exhibited into Court by Nicholas Lanier his executor, who made oath thereto, and it being duly proved by William Peebles, Henry Peebles and Thomas Burrows the several witnesses thereto is by order of the Court truly recorded and Certificate is granted the said Nicholas Lanier for obtaining a Probate in due form.

Teste: William Hamlin, Clerk Cur. A Copy, Teste: W.D. Temple, Clerk<sup>24</sup>

---

<sup>24</sup>Tyler's Quarterly, Vol. III. pp. 143-4.





"REFLECTIONS"  
WILLIAM CLINTON AND MYRLTE MARIE  
IN 1918, THEIR COURTING DAYS IN  
SANGER, TEXAS, DENTON COUNTY.

CHILDREN OF MYRTLE AMYX AND WM. CLINTON RICE IN 1983. THIS  
IS THE LAST TIME ALL EIGHT CHILDREN WERE TOGETHER. STANDING  
FROM LEFT TO RIGHT: JOLENE, GLORIA, VONCIL, CLARA, NANCY,  
FLOYD, MARGARET, AND LEWIS.







W. C. RICE HOME AT ELDORADO, OK.  
PICTURE TAKEN IN EARLY 1960's.

PICTURE AT BOTTOM WAS TAKEN IN 1952, THE NIGHT CLARA AND FLOYD GRADUATED FROM HIGH SCHOOL. THE WHOLE FAMILY WAS TOGETHER. THIS IS THE ONLY PICTURE I HAVE OF THE COMPLETE W. C. RICE FAMILY. LEFT TO RIGHT STANDING: MARGARET, FLOYD, LEWIS, CLARA. SEATED: JOLENE, VONCIL, DADDY, MOTHER, NANCY, AND GLORIA, AUTHOR OF THIS BOOK.





## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

## REFLECTIONS

## MYRTLE AMYX RICE

Myrtle Marie Amyx, daughter of William Harvey Amyx and Orlene Trent Amyx, was born around Slidell, Texas, Wise County, February 2, 1901. Myrtle was the eleventh of thirteen children; but she was the youngest daughter of William Harvey and Orlene. Myrtle's Mother, Orlene, died in 1913. Myrtle was only 12 years old. Zannie was still at home but soon married and Myrtle was left to cook for her Father and two younger brothers, Fred and Tide

Myrtle and her Father were very close. I remember Mother telling me when she was engaged to marry William Clinton Rice, that she had second reservations, because she worried about what her Daddy and two brothers would do without her. However, love for Bill won her over and she married William Clinton Rice, November 26, 1919.

Myrtle was taken by her Father to buy a wedding trousseau. Her wedding dress cost \$100.00; which was a lot of money in those days. Myrtle was very stylish, as her pictures reveal in her teens and courting days. She always had a different hat to wear with each outfit that she wore. The era was Victorian, when feminism, proper etiquette, and high fashion were the trend.

Here is a little story about the courting days of Myrtle and Bill.

"One Sunday, Mother and Daddy were out riding in an open topped vehicle, of what make and model, I cannot remember. However, Mother's hair had become all wind blown and fallen out of her hairdo. Mother always wore her hair in an upswept style, popular in those days. As she was fixing her hair she had put the pins in her mouth. She turned to Daddy and said, "You can kiss me now if you want to," and just laughed."

Mother always claimed that she and Daddy never did kiss until about a week or two before they married, which was Victorian!!

Bill Rice was a private in Company M, 3rd Battalion, Replacements Training Center, stationed at 383 Headquarters, Camp MacArthur, Texas; a division of the US Army. Bill started dating Myrtle about a year before they married. They corresponded during that year, and one of each of their letters follows:

Sanger, TX

October 16, 1919

Miss Myrtle Amyx

My Dear Girl:

Again I will try and answer your sweet letter that came to me last week.

Oh dear, how I wish I could see you right now.

Ever since Sunday I have thought of My Dear Girl so much and I thought sure it was going to rain all week and I couldn't come Sunday; tho' I have a hope, don't you dear?

Say Hun, what have you been doing all week. I bet you and Addie have been riding those little mules, now haven't you all? I sure would like to see you all on them--ha-ha.

Say Hun, are you coming to our contest supper to night-our Sunday School contest?

Say Dear, how does Clarence seem to your sister? I do hope they will get along fine since he has come home.

Hun, I will be just as true as I know how to be to you, and I know we will be Happy, don't you, Dear?

Say, I must close as I can't think of anything to write, so please answer soon, Dear.

I remain as ever,  
Your loving friend  
W.C.R.

Sanger, Texas

12-5-1918

Mr. William C. Rice

Dear Friend:

Will answer your highly appreciated letter that I rec'd yesterday. Your letter was unexpected, but ever welcome.



Yes, Mr. Rice, I'll be glade myself when all our boys will come back to our country and home. But just to think how hard it is that our Dear old boys have given their lives for our country and home.

But there is one dear old boy that will never come back to this world, but he is in a better one. Pardon me for speaking of him!

Now, Mr. Rice, you know that I didn't know that I could have been writing to you. It wasn't my fault, was it?

Oh, I will just tell you something funny. I stepped out in the back yard and our old cat had his head stuck in a peach can. You ought to have seen me. I didn't know what to do, but just stand there and look crazy.

I suppose Addie is over at her sister's, Kate. I'm looking for her home in a few days.

Yes, I am glade this war is over and hoping to see you back home soon. Why don't you let a person know when you are in town? I will go. Answer soon.

A Friend,

Myrtle Amyx

Well, Myrtle and Bill married and settled down in Sanger, Texas. Bill built them a house which is still in Sanger. It is a day care center today. Both grew up in Sanger and were active in church where Bill was a Baptist deacon. He worked at the power plant, did carpentry work, was involved in the Odd Fellows, and got busy starting their family. They had three children while living in Sanger: Lewis Frank, Nancy Lee, and Vencil. Eventually Bill and Myrtle followed the Rice Brothers to Memphis, Texas.

Another set of three children were born while they lived in Memphis. Margaret Marie, Billy Floyd, and Clara Bell. The family was active in church, with Myrtle teaching Sunday School and Bill working at the gin, and doing odd jobs when he could get them. It was the depression years and the dust bowl days were bad in Memphis as well as Oklahoma. Bill, however, was able to build another new home in Memphis for the family. He even traveled to Sanger and built a new home for Fred and Marvel Amyx, and Boss and Zannie Davis. Harvey and Carlos spent time in the Rice home and learned the carpentry trade under Uncle Bill.

In 1939, Bill and Myrtle were able to fulfill a life-long desire of their's. They sold their home, and moved to Eldorado, Oklahoma to the farm. Now, this move to the farm was quite a shock and change to the older children and hard to adapt to. They left a nice home to move into a dilapidated old

farm house without running water or an indoor bathroom, and no electricity. They had to use the outhouse, draw well water, cut wood, haul in old black coal, use kerosene lamps, and work on "that old farm". But they did make the change, and soon had a dairy barn built and cows to milk. Crops were planted, animals were raised, and they became quite efficient farmers. What a change! The children had to walk a mile or so to catch the bus to go to school. Then to top it all off--Myrtle and Bill were blessed with two more "change-of-life" babies! Gloria Jean and Eva Jolene were added to the family, in 1942 and 1944; (WAR BABIES) we're called!

By now, Lewis joined the Navy and Nancy was dating. They both soon married, and eventually Vencil, Nancy, and Margaret had all ventured to Oklahoma city to start their own lives. Before long Vencil and Margaret married, and Clara and Floyd had graduated from High School. Clara went off to college to become a teacher, then on to Chicago to marry. Floyd followed the family tradition by moving to Oklahoma City, getting a job and finding his spouse. Oh yes, I forgot to mention that Mother and Daddy were able to build another new home on the farm in 1951. Daddy sure worked hard to provide a new home for his family everywhere they lived.

With six children gone, Myrtle, Bill, and the girls were left to do what a larger family had shared in. Milking, hoeing, planting cotton, pulling it too, combining wheat, oats, barley, cutting maize, hauling hay, shocking cane, feeding pigs, chickens, turkeys, and gathering eggs. But we managed. Then Bill began to feel bad and became disabled. Myrtle was able to manage the farm work, and with God's help, was able to take care of Bill until his death in 1961.

Gloria had married by this time and Jolene married the year after Daddy's death. Mother was able to rent her farm out and lived in Eldorado, Oklahoma for 18 more years. She started staying with disabled older people and this gave her company and helped her to earn extra money. Doctor Barker, the town "Doc", said that Mother was better medicine for the older people than any he could give them. Mother then moved to Yukon and started keeping an older woman, Mrs. Hollingsworth; and worked there up until five months before she herself, died, in March of 1983.

We all miss our parents, who have gone on to be with the Lord, just like the rest of their family. But the consolation is in knowing that we will be able to join them someday: "That is part of "The BLESSED HOPE."

Written by:

Gloria Jean Rice West 1992



## REFLECTIONS

LEWIS FRANK RICE

"It was February of 1943. My fiancée, Ruby Fowler and I had just broken up. "I don't guess I'll ever get married," I told my sister, Nancy, before I left her home and caught the interurban back to the Naval base at Norman, OK. where I was stationed.

I bought a bag of popcorn and climbed aboard the interurban and settled down for the one hour ride back to the base, when suddenly she came aboard. She was a pretty girl with golden blonde hair; a pure look about her. I could almost hear the voice of God saying; "She is the one for you", just as He had told Jacob when he saw Rachel at the well. I couldn't believe it when she and her sister sat down directly across the aisle from me. I had to get acquainted with her--so I asked, "Are you girls sisters?" even though anyone could tell that they were. She told me they were returning from her uncles funeral at Altus. That really opened the door for me; because my parents lived near Altus at Eldorado, OK. We talked incessantly all the way to Norman. She said they would have to call a taxi to get home when they arrived in Norman. "I'll be glad to take you home if you get off at the gate of the base where I keep my car parked," I told her. I only used my car for special occasions since gas was rationed, and I figured this was a "special occasion." So they got off at the gate with me. Funny, we hadn't even introduced ourselves; but it didn't matter. I made some silly remark like, "My name's Rice, pour water on me and I swell up!"

I took the girls home. Margie, the younger girl asked me to come to church the next Sunday; but I told her I had to work; but I asked her if I could see her again. The older sister, Dorine, whipped out a paper and pencil and wrote Margie's telephone number and said, "You can come to see me sometime too." I knew she was just kidding.

When I got back to the base I told a fellow worker that I had met the girl I was going to marry.

I didn't see Margie. I did work all day that next Sunday, then a buddy and I went to town to catch a movie. We were walking down the street when someone yelled from a car that had stopped on the street. "Lewis Rice, you big liar, you!" I couldn't believe it--it was Margie. We

climbed into the car and she grabbed my hand like we had known each other a long time. We went to the soda shop with her and her friends. I took Margie home and told her I'd come up to Oklahoma City on Thursday night, where she was attending business college. I couldn't wait until Thursday night. When I walked into the cafeteria where Margie was working her eyes lit up and she gave me a big smile. I saw her every night after that for three weeks. I knew I wanted to marry her. We talked for hours on end, and I found out she was a preacher's daughter and a devout Christian. (I would not admit it to her or anyone else that God had called me to preach.) I did not think I ever would; but just in case I should, this girl would make a good preacher's wife. That special attraction had been there from the beginning and when I asked her to marry me, immediately she said, "Yes".

Dorine insisted we do it right--so she made quick arrangements with Preacher Hallock and a singer and piano player, and borrowed a white dress for Margie to wear. She even insisted I buy Margie a wedding band--even though I didn't have a \$100 to my name. We had a private wedding in the large living room of the dorm where Dorine lived, and Margie's Dad came and gave her away.

We didn't even have a room to sleep in, so Dorine spent the night with her friend and let us have her bed. The next day Margie and I drove out to Eldorado where my parents lived. I worked a week with my Dad doing carpenter work and sold a calf I had so we had money to rent a place to live when we got back to Norman. You would have thought we would have taken care of all these details before; but we weren't thinking that far ahead; we just wanted to get married.

The place we found to live was just a sleeping room, and we had to eat out. We could only afford one meal a day for Margie, and I ate on the base. After a week we got a room in a home that let us have kitchen privileges and Margie went to work. Every day before she would go to work she would write me a note. There was one note I will always remember. It contained a Scripture found in the book of Ruth. It said, "Whether thou goest I will go." I didn't need any proof of her devotion, but these were precious words that stuck in my memory.

After two years of marriage, God gave us a beautiful little red headed boy whom we named David. While Margie was still in the hospital, I received orders to ship to California to be sent to sea, soon. The thought of leaving my wife and brand new baby broke my heart. But--with such



a new baby, I couldn't take them with me; they would have to stay with my parents. I didn't know how soon I would be sent to sea.

Four months passed and I was still in Alameda Naval Base, so I sent for Margie and David. When I saw her walking down the isle of the train carrying the baby, I thought I had never seen such a beautiful sight in all my life. Living conditions were so bad where we were staying, that three weeks were all Margie could stand, so she and the baby went back to Oklahoma.

Four more months passed and I still had not shipped out. So, again I sent for Margie and David. By now he was eight months old. Living conditions were much better, even though they wouldn't be considered great these days. We shared a house with six Navy couples, and each one had one baby. There were two baths and one kitchen. The guys ate on the base and the women and babies ate in the kitchen. We were just happy to be together. Later we were able to get an apartment.

When David was two years old we had our second son, Donald. He was a beautiful baby, also with red hair. These two little boys were quite a pair and kept Margie on her toes.

The war was over and I was dismissed from active duty and got a job with a glass company where I had done part time work while I was in the service. Margie and I had become active in a small Baptist church; and I had been ordained as a deacon and taught Sunday School. I thought this would surely satisfy the Lord and I wouldn't have to preach; but the call to preach just got stronger. The machinery where I worked seemed to beat out the message, "Preach, Preach, Preach". I was afraid to tell Margie, because she had so many times, "I'm glad you're not a preacher." But I couldn't live with the pleading of the Lord any longer.

I came home from work early one night--my stomach burned--my heart was heavy and I had to tell Margie ; and if she left me--she just left me! I had to obey God's call! With tears streaming down my cheeks, I told her of God's call. She held me in her arms and said, "Honey, if that is what God wants you to do, I'll go along with you." Why had I doubted? Hadn't she said early in our marriage, "Whether thou goest I will go,"? So I quit my job and took my family back to Oklahoma to go to college at Oklahoma Baptist University in Shawnee, Oklahoma. We lived in houses with no running water, no phone, had two more babies--daughters, Elizabeth and Sharon.

We traveled many miles on weekends to churches I pastored. Only God's guarding angels kept us alive when I would fall asleep late on Sunday nights trying to get back to go to school the next morning. We carried bedding and food, bathed in wash tubs, washed our hair with laundry powder, went through many hardships, much happiness, and some tears. But, we did it TOGETHER. I spent five and one half years in college and seminary. A lot of this time Margie had to go it alone when I would be away from home in school or at work.

God moved us from Oklahoma to Colorado in 1957. I built a church building and pastored the church in Rangely, Colorado for seven and one half years. The church grew from four charter members to two hundred and fifty. I did carpenter work and drove a school bus to help meet the needs of my family.

In 1966 God called me back to California from which we had run many years before. We moved to a little town called Coalinga, California. It seemed Mission pastoring was my calling. Would Margie be willing to go?

The hardest part of leaving Colorado was leaving David who had married Beth Hopkins. They were so young, and it was so hard to just leave them in God's hands and trust that He would care for them. I had to go where God called.

We served in Coalinga twelve years. The years were sacrificial in finances. We moved into a four room house, no space for anything; but I knew I could build a new house if the church would agree and I would work to earn the money we needed. It seemed better to have Margie be with the children and help with the church work.

I became sick the first month we were in Coalinga. My tongue became thick and my vision was double and my legs didn't work very well. I don't know if I had a stroke or Multiple Sclerosis. The Doctor didn't know either--so I just filled my pulpit and held on to the stand! I preached when I couldn't see my Bible or the people I was preaching to; and the LORD BLESSED. The church grew and they raised my salary; they also voted to let me build a new parsonage. So with the help of the Lord and volunteers, I built a new house; even though I was not well enough to hold down a job with the public. I could work only a little while and sit down awhile; but we got the job done.



One day I made the mistake of trying to oil my power saw while it was still running. The oil can became entangled in the saw and jerked my hand into the blade. I lost two fingers and part of another.

While I was in the hospital recovering from this injury, the deacons decided I shouldn't work anymore. But; they were not willing to raise my pay. So I resigned. In two weeks the Lord gave me a little church in Riverdale. We moved out of the parsonage into a little house we owned across town and traveled back and forth to Riverdale on Wednesdays for Prayer Service; and on Sundays. I also worked forty hours a week on a carpenter job. The girls and Donald had also married by now.

After all the years I had worked and pastored the Lord finally gave me a church where I could give my full time. The church at King City was the most loving group of people I had ever worked with. We served there ten years. Margie and I worked as a TEAM through all the years. We visited the homes of church member, the hospitals, and traveled many miles from our home to church fields, worked in revivals, Vacation Bible Schools, and conventions. We hunted together, fished together, laughed, talked, cried and prayed together. My wife, my BEST FRIEND! Whatever there was to do, we did TOGETHER.

At age sixty eight, I finally decided to retire. The church gave us a retirement party; and invited many, many friends and family. Margie and I moved back to Coalinga; because we had a home there and our youngest daughter, Sharon, lived there. We traveled a lot and I supplied every chance I got. I still enjoyed preaching the WORD!

On August 7th, 1990 Margie and I prepared our trailer and lit out to Colorado, to enjoy some beauty and solitude, but; while Margie was driving she lost control of the truck and we were involved in a terrible accident.

I was terrified at first--then suddenly I was in the beautiful presence of the Lord. I thought, "I must have been killed in that accident." I looked around everywhere for Margie, but I couldn't find her, so I asked God, "Where is Margie?" He told me she was still on earth. She didn't die in the accident. "O Lord, let me go and be with her for awhile, until the kids can get there, she will be so afraid. She has always been with me--let me go to her now." So God said, "Yes, you can go for a few hours."

I knelt down beside her as she lay beside the road. Several people had come to her aid--but she was breathing so fast.

"Try to breathe a little slower, honey," I said, "Try to relax--darling." Then I took her face in my hands and told her, "Open your eyes and look at me Sweetheart." She opened her eyes and looked intently into my eyes. I don't know if she recognized me or not, but her breathing slowed and she seemed more calm..

I stayed out of the way as they loaded her and an injured man into an ambulance, then I got aboard. They didn't want to let me on, but I got on anyway.

I stayed in the emergency room all day--standing back so I would not interfere. Margie asked about my whereabouts all day, but no one would give her an answer.

About 7:00 p.m. one of the nurses told her, "Your daughter, Elizabeth will be here soon." I knew this meant that I was going to have to leave, because Elizabeth would recognize me. So I went to Margie's bed and told her, "I'm going to have to leave now, Sweetheart," and I walked out of the room! But, someday---it will be okay, because Margie will join me here with our Heavenly Father---because she promised, "Whether thou goest, I will go."

This is a biography of Lewis F. Rice, written by Margie L.Rice; as though Lewis were speaking himself. Beginning with the third paragraph, on page five to the end of the story, is her own interpretation. 1994



## REFLECTIONS

NACNY LEE BARFELL

Nancy Lee Rice was born February 19, 1924. She went to Oklahoma City to find a job and has lived there for nearly fifty years. She first went to work at the airplane plant with Vencil, but didn't like the work and went to work for the Daily Oklahoman. While working at the Daily Oklahoman she met Dick Barfell, her future husband.

A year later they married in Stillwater at the Methodist Church December 21, 1955, and have been happily united since then. They have one daughter, Glenna Jeanne Snook, who married Larry Snook. Glenna and Larry live in Marietta, GA, and have two wonderful children, Jason Snook and Nesha Marie Snook. Jason and Nesha come to visit their grandparents every summer.

Dick Barfell has been in construction most of his life. Nancy worked as a manicurist for a few years in the Springdale Beauty Shop in Oklahoma City. Nancy has always been available when different sisters would need her to come and help in times of crisis. She has helped nearly all of her sisters and 1 brother get established in Oklahoma City. What a privilege it is to have sisters and brothers who are willing to help each other, and are concerned for their welfare. Our family has been blessed!

"My Mother, Myrtle Marie Amyx Rice"

I am so happy that God gave me Mother and Daddy to be my parents. He could have given me parents who were wealthy; but he could not have given me parents who were more Christian and who could have loved me more than my Mother and Daddy.

I firmly believe that what you are taught when you are young will go with you all through your life. Mother always said, "It doesn't matter what a person does, you should always try

and seek to find some good in that person." We all have to forgive in order to be forgiven if we want to stand in the sight of God.

Mother's Mother, (my grandmother) died when Mother was only twelve. She had to become a full time housekeeper for Grandpa and Uncle Tide and Uncle Fred. Mother was always a housekeeper, wife, Mother, and Grandmother. Life was hard for her, but she went on. I never knew of my Mother to complain. I don't know where she got the strength to go on, doing what she had to do. She gave birth to eight children to take care of and nurture.

You better believe when we all went to Sanger to Grandpa's and our aunts and uncles, that Mother didn't have to preach to us, don't do this and don't do that. We knew that we were not suppose to get in anyone's drawers or closets. It was a crime if you were nosey in others people's home. Aunt Eva, Daddy's sister had a lot of what nots (as they were called in those days) and we walked very carefully in her house. It was almost frightful to go there. But did we have good food there and at Aunt Zanie's house!

My Mother married an upstanding citizen of Sanger, Texas, William Clinton Rice. Lewis, Vencil, and I were born in Sanger, Texas. My daddy worked hard all his life to support his family of eight children. He was a carpenter and later he and Mother bought a farm. I don't think Daddy was a farmer, but he tried the best he knew how. He provided Mother with a new home everywhere they lived.

Daddy finally moved his family to Memphis, Texas where he built a new home with Carlos and Harvey Anthony's help. They built the garage first, which we lived in until the house was finished. In 1939, Mother and Daddy bought a farm in Eldorado, Oklahoma. Gloria and Jolene were born in Eldorado.

I have many memories of living in Memphis. Margaret, Floyd, and Clara were born while living there. We always went to the Easter Egg hunts at Church on Sunday afternoon. Daddy was a deacon of the church. I was so proud of him



and Mother. I thought Mother was beautiful and Daddy so handsome. We always sat in the same pew. Mother always went to WMU at church, and the women would meet in their homes for lunch. Mother always fixed things up so pretty and had fancy things for them to eat. The church gave Mother baby showers, and I remember her hiding the baby clothes from us children. She did not want us to know she was going to have a baby. You know in those days the stork brought the children. (What a difference from then and today!)

Mother worked hard! She washed in a black wash pot and big tubs on the back porch. She canned fresh fruit and food every summer. We sat in the kitchen floor beside a big tub full of peaches and peeled them while Mother canned them.

Mother was never afraid. While living in Memphis our house was broken into several times. Once when Margaret was a baby, someone broke into our house and scattered her clothes all over the street and in a vacant lot. Mother would hear some body around the house and she would get up with the gun and wake us kids up and tell us to get on the floor. She would fire out the window.

Mother taught Vencil and I to set the table properly. She had an etiquette book that we had to study. On Sunday's we always had to use our best linen tablecloths and napkins. After dinner and a short nap for Mother and Daddy, we would all get in the car and take a ride. Usually to a park North of Memphis. We would go over to Wayside Inn for a while and visit Uncle Clarence and Aunt Hattie.

Mother always saw to it that we had nice clothes to wear. I don't know how she found time; but she did find time to make clothes for us. I'll never forget one Easter the dresses Mother made for Vencil and I. Vencil's dress was yellow pongee and mine was a purple taffeta. My dress was long princess style with long sleeves, buttoned up to the elbow with covered buttons that Mother made, and it buttoned down the front with covered buttons. Vencil's had a lot of fancy embroidery on it. Mother stayed up almost all night to finish them. What love and devotion.

Lewis , Vencil and I were baptized at Memphis, Tx. All three of us by Brother Miller. Mother had made Vencil and I dresses alike. They were made out of natural color linen with slips of different colors all through it. Vencil and I both wore these dresses alike when we were baptized. We accepted the Lord during a revival. Every night we would all sit in the living room and Daddy would read the Bible, then we would all say our prayers. We had fun at night. Daddy would stand on his head and let us kids ride on his back all around in the house.

I'll never forget one thing that happened while living at Memphis, Texas. Every summer the Assembly of God Church had revivals just like all of the other churches. It was held outside as it was so hot. One night we went over to the Assembly of God revival. At the end of the service Mother jumped out of the car and dropped Billy Floyd; he was just a baby. She went running to the front of the church shouting and talking in tongues. She went on and on. It scared Daddy and us kids to death. Her brother, Uncle Henry, and his family had just come from Dalhart, Texas to visit us. They got there just as Mother started shouting and heard her from our house. They came over to the church and found us. We finally got Mother home, but she sat on the divan all night reading the Bible and talking in unknown tongues. We would try to go and touch her and she told us to stay away; she was talking to God. She also sat there the whole next day. Needless to say, Uncle Henry and family left early the next morning.

Mother is in heaven now with God, Daddy, and Lewis. Mother said the last thing her Mother said to her, was she wanted a drink of water. The last thing on earth Mother said was, "Nancy, Nancy."

"Oh how grateful I am to have had her for a Mother."

Nancy Barfell 1994.



## REFLECTIONS

VONCIL HUDSON

I was born in Sanger, Texas on February 19, 1926 to William Clinton and Myrtle Rice. They already had two children, my oldest brother Lewis, and my sister, Nancy. The house I was born in is still in Sanger. It is a day care center now. That was the first of three homes Daddy built for his family.

When I was two years old, Mother and Daddy moved to Memphis, Texas. We rented a house while Daddy built the garage where he was to build the new home for us. When the garage was finished, we moved in it and then Daddy, with the help of Harvey and Carlos Anthony, built the house. This was a beautiful house with lots of room, especially after living in the garage. We had to walk one mile to grade school, and then we had to walk one and a half miles to Junior High.

We had a big back yard. Part of it was fenced off. The back part had a barn and hog pens. We had a cow and chickens. When Daddy butchered the hogs, he would hang the hams in the rafters of the garage to cure out. That was sure good ham and sausage.

Mother always made sugar cookies for us and we would stand around to grab bites of the raw dough. Mother made the best hot rolls with butter, that would just melt in your mouth. Mother loved to entertain her Sunday School class and quilting club in her home and people loved to come to Mother's house.

We went to the First Baptist Church in Memphis. Daddy was a deacon and Mother attended the Women's Auxillary. Nancy and I would go and stay in the nursery. I have many fond memories of the church in Memphis. That is where I first accepted the Lord as my Saviour. So did Nancy. We were baptized at the same time, wearing dresses alike that Mother made for us.

When I was five years old, Mother had my younger sister, Margaret. I was so excited I put a hoe on a tree limb and hung on it. It came off and down I went and got a hard knock on the back of my head.

Mother was never idle. I never saw her sit down without hand work, or something to do. Mother made all of her eight children and their spouses a quilt or two, and all of her grandchildren a quilt. Daddy worked hard to

provide for his family. He liked for us to brush his hair, (which he didn't have much), and clean out between his toes. He would get down and let us ride on his back. He was a big man and could he ever stand on his head!

I was a Freshman in High School when my parents bought a farm East of Eldorado, OK. Nancy and I were not very happy about moving to a farm after living in town. I graduated from High School in 1943. It thundered and rained all night of the Commencement Exercises. We went in to town early and took our clothes and dressed at the school. It was so muddy we couldn't get back home and had to spend the night in town.

A year after I graduated, I came to Oklahoma City and worked at the airplane plant; which is now Tinker field. When the war was over, most everyone was laid off. In two weeks I started to work at the Daily Oklahoman.

One week end I went with a girl friend to Geary, OK on the train to visit her family. Coming back on Sunday night, the cutest Sailor was sitting with a girl across from my friend and I. I thought he had the prettiest brown eyes I had ever seen. On Monday at work, my great Aunt Grace called and asked Nancy and I to come over because her stepson was here from the Navy. That evening we got on the inter-urban and rode to Yukon and got off at the drug store. We called Aunt Grace. She said, "I'll send Gene, my stepson down to get you." Well--when he walked in, what a shock! He was the sailor on the train the night before. We dated and in the next two weeks following our meeting, we went to Eldorado and got married in the Baptist Church. We only had two weeks together before he had to go back to the Navy. Gene was there three more months before he was finally discharged.

Our first home consisted of only a living room and a bedroom. Gene started to work at the Yukon Flour Mill where his Father worked. I was still working at the Daily Oklahoman. We moved to a small house in Oklahoma City. In 1947, our first daughter, Nancy Carol was born. Aunt Grace passed away, and Gene and I moved to Yukon and lived with his Father. I quit work, and in 1950, Marsha Dianne was born.

We went to the First Baptist Church in Yukon. Gene taught Sunday School and so did I. In 1951, our first son, William Howard was born. By this time we had bought a new home on 8th Street. Then we had our second son, Ronald Steve; which completed our family. When Steve started to school I went to work at Western Electric, from which I retired in 1980 with 21



years service. Gene retired from Bendix Corporation with 25 years service.

Our family grew to include twelve grandchildren and 2 great grandchildren. We enjoyed our children and their children, both when they were young and grown up.

In 1986, Gene became sick and when I got him to the hospital, we found out he had lung cancer. He went through two weeks of radiation, two weeks off, then two weeks of treatment again. Finally Gene had about one good year of feeling good. He was able to go to church and a few places. He sat and read the Bible a lot in that time. On October 30th, 1987, he had a stroke at the hospital. While he was there that week, all my sisters and brothers were able to go visit him at the hospital. Gene talked about his spiritual life, and then my brother, Lewis prayed. Afterwards, there was weeping and tears in everyone's eyes. Gene witnessed to others a lot. I brought him home from the hospital and was able to take care of him until he left this earth and went to a much better place, on November 3, 1987.

The Lord has been good to me and I'm so thankful for my family. I'm grateful for the Christian Heritage that my Mother and Father gave us. Gene and I tried to instill this to our children. I have lived in Yukon 47 years and gone to the First Baptist Church 47 years.

Voncil Rice Hudson 1994

## REFLECTIONS

## CHRISTMAS 1993 WITH MARGARET AND JIMMY WALKER

"It was blistering hot as we chopped cotton on adjoining farms in Oklahoma during the days of the dust bowl and great depression. As we hopped barefoot from one shady spot to the next, there was still time to dream of a romantic future--riding an elephant in Thailand, a camel in Jerusalem, a submarine to see the tropical fish of Hawaii, a helicopter ride over the garden isle of Kauai, strolling the beaches of Bali, visiting the floating markets of Bangkok, drinking a Singapore Sling in the Raffles Hotel in Singapore, cruising tropical islands, seeing the Golden Triangle, crossing the Sea of Galilee in a boat, seeing Jericho ruins from cities built thousands of years before the time of Abraham, relaxing at Lake Tahoe, seeing the pyramids of the Yucatan, exploring the rain forests of Costa Rica, and enjoying the blessings of a loving family, caring neighbors and a host of friends far and near.

All of these exciting dreams came true for us this year; at times we thought of pinching ourselves to see if this were all really happening. We are thankful to God for these opportunities to see more of his creation of nature and people.

This was a fun year with the family, we were at Beverly's for her 40th birthday (ouch!). She got the usual bad jokes and gifts. Colleen, now 6, flew out alone from Chicago to stay a few days before Karen, Keith, Lara, and Michael arrived. She was a perfect guest. Every suggestion for activities was answered with an enthusiastic "sure". Lara had her special time at the end of the vacation; and we took her to visit her Aunt Beverly and Uncle Joe while we attended the American Baptist Churches convention in San Jose, California. San Jose, Costa Rica was our base for a different trip. Michael, 4, assured us that he is ready to come out alone next year. We were at Karen's in April, then we all went to Houston for the wedding of Rhonda Duckers, our niece. We had a family reunion in Detroit at the Ekstrom's, our niece and husband that accompanied us to Costa Rica. It was a great time of eating, swapping tall stories of exaggerated past exploits, and discovering little aberrations of behavior previously unknown--very illuminating to some parents and offspring. No details will be reported for danger of self-incrimination. A reunion of the Victory and Templelight Sunday School classes from North Shore Church gave clues that some of us have aged a tad in the past 40 years. Then the usual



Oklahoma-Texas jaunt to see relatives; we can never figure why travel can't occur from east to west----!?

We had a fright in March when Margaret had a ruptured appendix. The many prayers, \$7,000 of antibiotics, and a great doctor led to a rapid and full recovery.

We are dreaming of a White Christmas, and it is a pretty sure thing, as we are spending it with Karen and family in Chicago.

Good health and joy now surround us, and we pray that they shall be yours in 1994."

#### MARGARET MARIE RICE WALKER

Margaret Marie was born August 13, 1931 at Memphis, TX., Hall County. When the family moved to Eldorado, Margaret spent her teenage years working on the farm, just like all the other siblings.

One night, when Margaret was about fifteen, she went out to refill the coal oil lamp. She tripped on the rock walk and fell, breaking the lamp, and cutting her wrist pretty bad. She had to be taken to the hospital to sew up her arm. When Margaret was about sixteen, she had rheumatic fever and had to stay at home in bed for about a year. She had to do her studies at home; but eventually she recovered and was able to graduate with her class.

Jimmy Walker lived about 1 mile East of us on a farm. Someone had matched Jimmy up with a date with our cousin, Naomi Dee Rice. Well, when Naomi Dee went back to Memphis, Jimmy made a trip back to our house, but not to see her. Jimmy had his eyes set on fair-haired, blue-eyed Margaret!

Margaret finished high school and went to OK. City, OK., and worked at the Daily Oklahoman for one year. Jimmy had graduated from Oklahoma State University, and already served his hitch in the service. He got a job with US Gypsum in Sweetwater, TX. In September of 1949, Margaret and Jimmy married in the First Baptist Church at Eldorado, OK., Jackson County. They moved to Sweetwater, and then Jimmy was offered a wonderful job in Chicago with US Gypsum.

Chicago was their home for over 40 years. Jimmy was Vice President of Research for US Gypsum and had the wonderful opportunity to travel all over the world for them.

Two beautiful daughters blessed this family: Beverly Joan and Karen Sue. Beverly and Karen attended the University of Puget Sound in Washington State, and both received their masters degree. Beverly teaches in Concord, CA. Karen is an associate minister at the North Shore Baptist Church downtown Chicago.

Three beautiful grandchildren, the apple of the Walker's eyes, have graced the home of Karen and Keith; and every summer, their grandparent's home--too!

Margaret and Jimmy are active in their church, and their hobby is globe trotting. They celebrated 45 years of marriage this year, 1994. Jimmy has had two close calls with death, induced by a heart condition; but God has been gracious and given him many more years of fun and life. Margaret had a close call in 1993 with a ruptured appendix. God is good, and gave her a wonderful recovery. They are spending their goldern years in sunny, southern California.



## REFLECTIONS

## "MY LIFE IN ELDORADO"

I'm Billy Floyd Rice, the fifth child of W. C. and Myrtle Rice. I was one of eight children; one brother and six sisters. On Thanksgiving Day, 1939, the family moved to Eldorado, OK. from Memphis, TX. where I was born. I had just started to school in Memphis and was in the first grade when we moved to Eldorado.

When we arrived on the farm that day, Margaret, Clara, and I, had never seen the house that we were moving into. We had the shock of our life. The house was an old house that we were moving into. The wind and snow would blow through the cracks in the walls. In Texas we lived in an almost new home my Father had built. There in Texas we had running water, bathrooms, and electricity; at this house we moved to, were none of these conveniences. My sisters and I would run around the house and call it the "jail house".

But this was to be our home and Mother and Dad did everything they could do to make us happy for they were Christian parents. I had lots of fun with them in working the farm and playing with my sisters. Dad and I had lots of fun hauling hay in from the fields and stocking it. Sometimes I would pick up a bundle and I would say, "Snake", or "Skunk". Daddy would do the same to me. He did actually throw a snake in a bundle of hay into the wagon and I would jump out. Mother would always cut up with us kids. One of the things she would say while she was sewing is: "What if an old ugly woman, on a cold winter day, would come and knock on your door and asked you if she could come in, what would you do?" I replied that I would shut the door in a hurry. Mother would at the same time stick me with the needle and say, "The old woman was coming in any way", and then she would just laugh.

On the farm with no laundry facilities, Mother would have to heat water in the wash pot and do all of the laundry on the rubboard for a family of eight and hang the clothes out on the clothes line. She also worked in the fields with us pulling cotton; even with small babies to tend to. She was a great Mother. Dad would do carpenter work in Eldorado and left the farming and milking to us kids. When I was ten years old I cut my little finger off on the

windmill. So part of me will always be on the farm. I got out of chopping cotton and the field work that summer.

When my brother and older sisters finally left the farm to work in the cities, it was always a big day when they would come to see us with their "partner-for-life", eventually having and bringing children which we all loved.

With all of the crude ways of farm life, we still like to think about the "good-old-days" and sometimes wish that it was the same now as then. There are so many things I could write about, but it would take to long to write about them.

One day while pulling cotton, after lunch, Clara, Margaret and I were going back to pull some more. My sack had to be patched at lunch time. Now I was always pulling tricks on my sisters. After Mother patched my sack I found an old stripped tie and got some long copper wire and tied the tie to the end of my sack. When we got to the cotton patch, I let the sack down and hollered "Snake" and started running toward them. The tie was following me since it was tied to my sack. Margaret and Clara saw it and actually thought it was a snake.

Billy Floyd Rice 1994

### "BILLY FLOYD RICE"

Floyd was born August 3, 1933 in Memphis, Clay County, TX. to Bill and Myrtle Rice. He was the younger of two boys born to a family of six girls.

Floyd moved to Oklahoma City after graduating from High School and met Betty Rogers, and in one week he had married her. Nothing slow about him. They lived in California for years and eventually settled in Sanger, TX.; home of our Mother and Father's youth and burial place. Floyd is a carpenter, carrying on the trade of his Father, and a very good carpenter at that.

Betty is a wonderful wife, Mother, and sister-in-law. She has helped Floyd work and they have done well in life. They have three children: Billy Floyd, Jr., Kathy, and Kelly. All three children are married and have blessed Floyd and Betty with five wonderful grandchildren.



It is always a treat to go to Sanger for family reunions or just to visit. Floyd and Betty are so hospitable and always make you feel welcome. I don't suppose anyone has had as much company at one time as they have. I would like to thank my wonderful brother and Betty for providing us with an abode, full of warmth, love, food, and the "good-times". And as usual, we will all be making the annual trek to their house for another Amyx Reunion; which has been going on for over sixty years. This is a great tradition! Thanks, Floyd and Betty, for the "Memories".

## REFLECTIONS

## CLARA BELL RICE DUCKERS

On a Wednesday, September 4, 1935 I was born in Memphis, TX to my parents, Myrtle and Wm. (Bill) Rice. Dr. Blue was my doctor. I was told I had so much hair that I looked like a monkey.

My most precious memories of living in Texas until the age of four was my boy friend across the street named, Adrian Reynolds. His Mother had a big "black Mammy", and I was scared to death of her. I'd run home as fast as I could. Daddy always scared Adrian with his false teeth. Another memory was the huge church with a big pipe organ.

The move to an Oklahoma farm in 1939 was horrible. From having a nice city home with electricity and running water; we now had a run-down house with outdoor toilet and a cistern for water to draw up with a bucket, then drink with a dipper. My brother and I ran around the house calling it on old "jail house".

Life on the farm was hard! My three sisters and two brothers all had to work hard. Brother Lewis left to join the Navy, got married, and then Daddy built a house next to ours for Margie to live in. Mother had Gloria when I was six. Two years later Jolene was born, making us a family of eight; so two new babies and I wasn't the baby anymore. Not long after that Margie had David. Big sister, Nancy got married and left, and Vencil finished High School and they both left for Oklahoma City for work. That left five of us kids then. Margaret usually did the house work and Bill and I did the milking of thirty cows; and all the farm work of hoeing, pulling cotton, plowing, shocking hay, you name it we did it! Chopping wood and breaking up coal was also a winter job, as we only had wood stoves to cook and keep warm. We all stayed in one room, the other rooms were cold in the winter. Cold beds, but lots of cover.

School was always important to me. Studying was number one, followed by basketball, drama plays, and baseball. We lost to the state winner in basketball my Senior year in an overtime by one point. We had an outstanding basketball club all five years, grades eight through twelve. I



graduated and was the Salutatorian in the Freshman class as well as the Senior class. I went on to college at Oklahoma A & M, now Oklahoma State. I was the first one in my family to go to college, thanks to a dear family friend that paid my first year.

I had a trip to Illinois after graduating from High School; given to me as a gift by my sister, Margaret, and her Jimmy. It was during that trip that I met my "true-love". Ronald lived across the street and just had gotten a new yellow Plymouth convertible. I was determined to meet him, rather Margaret was hoping I could meet him. One day I was walking baby Beverly, when Ron came home. His mom had come to see Beverly, so it all came naturally. Two nights later four of us young people went to have pizza and Ron and I could not take our eyes off each other. I saw Ron nearly every nite of my stay. I went back to OK. to start college and didn't see Ron for two years; but we wrote each other. Then I saw him the Summer of 1955 and 1956. I graduated in January of 1957, and took a teaching job in Illinois so I could get my man.

We were married in Eldorado, OK. on June 29, 1957. It was one hundred and twelve degrees in the church and the candles melted. Boy, it was hot, but who noticed it? I HAD MY MAN! We lived in IL. the next twenty three years. We had two wonderful children, Ronda and seven years later, Derek. I helped put Ron through his Ph.D., by teaching, and I have been teaching for thirty five years. We built two homes in IL. Our last was a dream house on a hill. The kids loved the place and have many memories of swimming parties, picking wild black berries, and the misery of the long winters; and a long road that was fun to drive when icy. We all learned to ice skate, one of my childhood desires. Ronda and I both took ice skating lessons from Michael Kirby who was Sonja Henie's ice dancing partner in movies. What a dream to skate with him!

Ronda finished High School and during her Junior year we drove all over Texas for her to choose a college. After nearly going to Baylor, she decided on Texas A & M, and what an "AGGIE" she became, and is! Talking to her in late October of 1977, after closing down our pool in freezing weather, she told us how she had to leave the pool as it was too hot. At that moment, we decided to move to Texas in two years. We had the worst winter that year. Can you believe sixty five inches of snow? Derek, his friend and I got on the roof and cut slices five foot high and slid them off the roof. The boys slid from the roof as the snow was as high as the roof line. The next year was worse--eighty five inches! So we said, "This is it!"

Ron had his own private practice and I had been teaching for twenty years; but we sold our dream house and moved to Texas in December of 1979. Ron flew back and forth keeping his practice in Illinois while trying to establish a practice in the Houston area. All of that came to a crashing halt on June 15, 1980 when Ron suffered an aneurism of the brain, causing a stroke; which put him into a coma for over two weeks. Five doctors said he would die; but if he lived he would be a "vegetable".

Through the miracle of God and prayers, Ron came out of the coma and learned to walk and talk all over. Short-term memory was his biggest loss but with time even that improved. That wasn't the only big illness; I had a malignancy in my breast; and it was removed while Ron was still in rehab. We did survive the year.

I started back to teach right away. Ron somewhat started a practice; but the bottom dropped in 1982 and people wouldn't pay, so Ron closed his practice and started working for the prison. He continued many jobs in various places: North Dakota, South Dakota (wouldn't license him). Back to Texas, Wisconsin, then Texas again. With the economy things were unstable. Over the last two years he has been without a job as much as he has worked.

A job in New Mexico didn't pan out due to licensing. A job that lasted two and one half months in Georgia ran out due to economy. Ron came home in November of 1993, and could have had a job in the Valley, but got wind of a job in Corpus Christi. While holding off for the job in the Valley, Ron suddenly had to have a quadruple bypass. He heard the second day after surgery that he got the job in Corpus Christi. But I will continue to remain here in The Woodlands, until I'm sure the job will last. As I write, he plans a trip to Nebraska to see about a possible job, and had a good interview locally today. So again I wait and will move or stay here until I feel Ron has the right job.

Probably the biggest events were April 24, 1993 when Ronda married David Read in a beautiful ceremony. We're so proud of him. Derek went to Las Vegas June 15, 1991 and married Cheryl, an "Aggie" too. Derek met her while they were in college. On December 10, 1993, Derek and Cheryl presented us with our first grandchild, a delightful, happy, precious, little Blake. He's trying to crawl and walk, eats table food, and since they have lived with us for a while, I've been able to enjoy my grandson everyday since he was born.



Our life has been wonderful, with many ups and downs in the last fourteen years since moving to Texas; but we wouldn't trade the friends or our children's mates. We feel we have been very blessed to get Cheryl and David. We now look forward to more grandchildren.

I'll continue teaching maybe two or three more years. I've worked two jobs for five years. I teach school and work at Dillards; but with my discount, most of my checks go back for payments! The whole family enjoys the benefits. Now since I've become a member of DAR, it has given me a new hobby to enjoy through the hard work of sister, Gloria.

Our goal is to enjoy life and travel. Travel to date has taken us to all the US States and Alaska and Hawaii twice; once on our Twenty Fifth wedding anniversary. It was a dream trip--cruised around the island. Two years later we took our children on the same cruise; since we had enjoyed it so. Then two years later we went to Tahiti. I'll take Hawaii! Australia is next we hope.

We look forward to the "SENIOR DAYS". We just hope that we can visit regularly the family that is left of Myrtle and William Rice. "THANKS TO GOD FOR THIS WONDERFUL LIFE"

## REFLECTIONS

GLORIA JEAN RICE WEST

My earliest recollections of home are wonderful memories all tucked in the recesses of my mind. When I stop, to begin to think of them, many come rushing to the fore-front of my mind. How can one begin to set pen to all of the emotions, feelings, experiences, and thoughts enjoyed, endured, and imagined?

I was born January 10, 1942, in Eldorado, OK. on a cold, winter night on the farm; the seventh child of Wm. Clinton Rice and Myrtle Amyx Rice. Eldorado is in Southwest Oklahoma, close to the Red River and Texas border. This explains my near-Texas accent! I arrived before Doctor Crow got to our house. So I made my own entrance into this awesome world and would not wait on help. To this day I suppose I'm still that way, impatient, and I want to do things my way! That's not always a good characteristic!

Trying to decide just what I want to tell is not easy. Many things come to mind, but here goes:

"I remember sitting in Daddy's lap and playing with his pocket-watch. I would listen to it and put it back and forth in his overalls pocket. There was a big brown birth mark on Daddy's leg and he loved for Jolene and I to wash and wash to try and remove that old birth mark. Alas, we never could get it off. I imagine he chuckled to himself, and really enjoyed the attention. Daddy was a big man! He loved to go to church and always looked so nice. Overalls was his usual attire on the farm, khacki pants for casual dress; but a suit, white shirt and tie was always his Sunday dress.

Daddy was very religious and sometimes too strict, or so we thought. Now I realize these were his convictions and he was trying to instill in us Christian values. His motive was in our best interest. However, he was a wonderful father, he loved to play with his children, and was a very proud man. People didn't have to guess what Daddy thought or believed. He lived his convictions!



Daddy was a big eater and loved cobbles, especially blackberry; but the seeds ran him crazy when they got under his false teeth. Anything sweet was right up his alley, so to speak. Mother always cooked the things Daddy liked, and us kids too. Speaking of eating and religion, I never could quite figure out Daddy's grace at meal time. He always said the same thing, half I could understand, and half I couldn't. I've always been mystified about what he was saying.

One year Daddy made Jolene and I little home-made doll cradles for Christmas. He painted them green and Mother made the mattress for them. I wish to this day I had that little cradle. One day Daddy made me a bow and arrow and taught me how to shoot it. Daddy took me to the fields with him and I helped him combine wheat, oats, and barley. We all cut maize heads and put them in toe sacks and dumped it in the back of the pickup. Mother usually went to the cotton patch with us and helped us pull cotton. Occasionally Daddy pulled cotton too. We had a dairy and we always had to get that milking done before we could go play basketball or anything else. Every morning we were up by five o'clock, ate breakfast, and then out to the barn we went. Would it ever end? I was so happy to get off that farm, and I swore I never would live on the farm when I got married. Now I realize how fortunate I was to have had the opportunity to be raised on the farm.

One day I was helping Daddy cut wheat and I was standing on the combine that was being pulled by the tractor. I had to raise and lower the sickle to cut the grain. Well, I was tired and begged Daddy to let me drive the tractor. He finally relented and traded places with me. Well, the first corner I turned, I kept turning and turned right into the spokes of the big wheel on the combine. The tongue of the combine went right up on the back wheel of the tractor. Daddy was thrown and half jumped, off of the tongue. He managed to get back on the tractor, pulled the brake and stopped the tractor. I was in a state of shock and thought I was going to get a "whipping" for sure! But I didn't. I think Daddy was too shocked to do anything. We got a two day reprieve, due to having Mr. Freeman come to weld and repair the combine tongue.

Once when I was about six or seven years old I found a perfume bottle that looked like a kerosene lamp. I got behind the bed and tried to light the bottle with matches. Well, the curtains caught fire, and I started running and hollering "booger, booger." Mother and Daddy ran into the bedroom, saw the fire, and they all managed to put it out. I don't remember getting a spanking, but I sure was frightened.

Christmas was always wonderful while growing up. Oh how much fun we had. The house was full of people, cooking aromas were in the air, and suspense and lots of action were the norm. I remember lying under the tallest Christmas tree you could imagine. As our ceilings were ten foot tall, it seemed we always had a tall tree. I would lie on the floor under the tree and watch those bubbling candle lights; intrigued with my reflection in the big beautiful colored bulbs hanging on the tree.. My face sure did look strange in the bulbs! Christmas Eve Mother, Daddy, and the older married children would make their traditional trip to Altus to buy all of the gifts for eight children and however many grandchildren they had at the time. Christmas morning was extraordinary! Jolene's and my eyes just couldn't seem to grasp all the gifts and toys under that huge beautiful tree. Of course, we found our beautiful doll left just for us by SANTA CLAUSE!

One Christmas is memorable and we all laugh now when we talk of it. Our farm house was brand new. Pallets with children and adults were everywhere. I was sleeping at Mother and Daddy's feet, when all of a sudden we heard: "Ho Ho Ho, Merry Christmas," and bells started ringing and the door opened up. Santa made noises, ringing his bell and moving about; then he called out, "Merry Christmas and a Happy New Year," and left, ringing those bells. I looked out the window, and exclaimed, "I see Santa in the sky, I really do." Everyone just laughed at my imaginative sighting of SANTA CLAUSE. My brother-in-law Gene Hudson was the actor!

Mother was the most wonderful Christian Mother anyone could have. She never had an idle moment, as she always told us, "An idle mind is the devil's workshop." I think she really believed it as you never found Mother idle, just sitting doing nothing. She worked harder than any woman I've ever known and could work circles around her daughters, sons too! Mother loved people and people loved Mother!

Mother always sewed for us. As she sewed, Jolene and I would sit on the floor playing with paper cut-out dancing girls or boys that she made to entertain us. That is how Jolene and I learned to sew, sitting down and hand sewing doll clothes she would cut out for us to keep us busy too. Winter nights were always cold because we only had the kitchen and one bedroom heated. Mother heated irons and bricks, wrapped them and put them to our feet to keep them warm. The cover was so heavy you couldn't move once you got in bed; plus you didn't dare move after you got a place warm. Snow would blow in the kitchen window on the white bench behind the table; oh how cold that bench was as we got up to eat breakfast and get



ready for school. We wore long handles in the winter to keep warm, and the ugliest old long stockings. But everyone else did too.

Home remedies were often used and possibly the cure. If we got sick, Mother would put kerosene and sugar on a cloth and heat it; next applying it to our chest and neck. It felt good whether it worked or not. One time we got the itch. All five of us kids; Margaret, Floyd, Clara, Jolene and I. We had to put stinking sulphur all over us. What Memories!

One time my neices and nephews and Jolene and I were out at the barn playing. I got a pitchfork and started chasing them pretending to be the devil. Well, I think the devil got me. I dropped the pitchfork and it stuck almost through my foot. I got blood poisoning, had to get a tetanus shot, take antibiotics; and Daddy had to carry me up to my Sunday School Class. I had to elevate my foot for about a week. Again, home remedies were put into effect. Mother got a slab of salt pork and put it on my foot to draw out the poison. Our fondest memories are playing in the hayloft, graineries, swimming in the ponds, and building a log cabin with fence posts, made complete with our little tea set.

Summers in Southwest Oklahoma were hot! Before Daddy built the new house, Mother would pour water on the East front porch. She would wet toe sacks and hang them on a trellis on the South end of the porch and then she put a pallet on the cool wooden floor of the porch. Jolene and I would take our nap out there, or rest during the hottest part of the day. Air conditioning for sure! Many is the night that we would take our beds outside to sleep. We took baths in a number two wash tub in the well room by the kitchen. I remember our hand crank telephone, kerosene and wood stoves, wooden ice box, kerosene lighting, windcharger for the radio, and pot bellied stove with black coal and kindling that we had to bring in for heat. We had an old dirt cellar that we shared with the snakes, and a two-holer, complete with the Sears Catalogue. Eventually we got a new concrete cellar and a new one-holer. After I married Mother got running water piped in from town.

Our farm was quite productive. We always had a garden, our own beef and pork, milk and butter,(which we all hated to churn) and chickens we killed every summer and plenty of eggs to eat and sell. In those days, milk and eggs could be sold and that would bring in quite a lot of money. Of course, in those days school turned out every fall and everyone pulled cotton. That is how we bought our school fall clothes. Technology has put a stop to hard labor practically, but it has really cost society to produce enough goods and supplies and jobs for people to pay for the modern conveniences. We also

raised turkeys and had to help Mother catch them, pluck and dress them, and then she sold them at Thanksgiving and Christmas. Needless to say, that brought in needed cash for such a big family to buy gifts for.

We had an old piano which Clara could play quite well. She was the pianist for the church several years until she went to college. I took lessons, but again was "impatient" for I could play by ear, and had much rather play my way than have to read complicated music. I've regretted all my life I didn't continue my piano lessons. I remember studying my reading lessons and our spelling words were always in the back of the reader. I would not only learn how to spell these words, but would memorize them in order, every column. Billy Floyd would usually give me my spelling words. We had a big blackboard at home, and I can remember whiling away the hours with chalk, an eraser, and that blackboard.

Well, time passed--I was a good student in school, sang in glee club, at church, and I was Taffy Ann in the operetta "Taffy Ann". I played basket ball up until I married when a Junior in High School. I met Roy, and forgot everything! I just wanted to get married and leave that farm, doing so at age seventeen, and had three children before I was twenty one years old. While never being sorry, I would do things a little later in life if I had the chance; and heartily recommend to my grandchildren to not do as I did so young. Wait on marriage and having a family. That will come. Get an education first. At twenty five I had my fourth and last child. God has blessed me with a wonderful husband, four wonderful, beautiful, handsome, and smart children, and the most beautiful grandchildren anyone could have. Smart too. My greatest hope is that all of my children and their children will be blessed in life as I have. May they all come to know the Lord and be respectable citizens and contribute worthwhile things in their life to society. "Whatsoever your hands find to do, do it with all your might".<sup>25</sup> Remember too, we bring nothing into this world and we can take nothing out of this world; but we can leave a---GOOD NAME."

Mother and Grandma Gloria 1994

---

<sup>25</sup>The Holy Bible, Ecc. 9:10.



## REFLECTIONS

EVA JOLENE RICE GILBERT

I was born April 8, 1944; the last of eight children that was born to Myrtle and William Clinton Rice in Eldorado, Oklahoma.

I lived my first 18 years in Eldorado. I have five older sisters and had 2 brothers. My brother, Lewis is deceased.

Growing up on a farm was lots of fun; but I wouldn't want to live on one now. We had to milk cows, herd turkeys, feed chickens, and pigs. Every year we killed chickens to put in the freezer. We had to pull cotton, help cut wheat, oats, etc.

Gloria is two years older than me. We played outside a lot. We always made lots of mud pies. One time we got some eggs from the chicken house and put in our mud pies. Well--Mother got us for that! We always liked to play in the trees and the hay loft. We managed to always get in trouble, because we would break the limbs off of the trees and try to hide them. We didn't realize you could see where the limbs had been broken off, but we still had fun. Gloria and I had nephews and nieces that's close to our age. When they came we always had lots of fun.

Mother made lye soap when Daddy would kill a pig. We sat lots of hours in the barn at night, cutting fat into small pieces to be cooked down for lard. Mother cooked it out side in a big black wash pot. We also got some cracklings to eat before Mother would make crackling cornbread. We also had pig brains with our scrambled eggs for breakfast. The home cured ham and fresh tender loin was the best eating anyone could have. We heated water up many times in the wash pot and washed our clothes. It's sure lots easier now!

Daddy always played with us kids. I remember Daddy standing on his head for us. He had false teeth that he always stuck out of his mouth and chased after the kids. He loved to make the little ones run and holler. One time

Daddy got off of the tractor and caught a little rabbit and brought it home for Gloria and me.

Mother was the best Mom anyone could have. Mother was always there for me. She taught us to cook, wash, clean, and we always had to help her with the canning. Mother was always a hard worker. She worked in the fields with us; and always cooked a big meal. But, most of all, Mother was lots of fun. She loved to be with us kids and with her grandchildren. Mother also sewed and made our clothes; we even had to wear clothes made out of feed sacks.

Mother was the best friend anyone could have. She was always helping other people in Eldorado. She was always taking clothes to needy people, and she always took the older people and widows to the store. Mother always loved Christmas, and would start baking and cooking ahead of time. That is when we would always get together. The best part as a kid was when the older brothers and sisters and children came home to Mother and Dads. Boy, did we have a house full, with kids and pallets all over the floor!

I had a Christian Mother and Daddy. I accepted Christ at the age of seven. I am very proud to have parents that took me to church and taught me the right values of life. We all should be glad that our family came from Chrisitan homes.

I played basketball in Junior High and High School. I always enjoyed sewing in Home Economics.

After I finished High School, I married Billy Wayne on June 10, 1962. We lost our first son, born March 5, 1963; due to being born four months early. Clint was born April the 22 of 1965. Sherry was born January 7, 1969.

In 1988, Billy Wayne and I remarried after 18 years apart. It had to be in God's hands that we got back together after that many years. We are very happy now, and I give all of that credit to God. We have a daughter-in-law, Regina. Regina and Clint have a daughter named Sierra, born November 5, 1993. She is 10 months old now. We also have a son-in-law, Terry Torres. Terry and Sherry have a daughter named Tonya, who was born August 2, 1989. She is five years old. We have a wonderful family.



My thanks to Gloria for the work that she has done on this book. I know the time and money it has taken her to get the information to write it. I hope that everyone will enjoy the book.

Jolene Gilbert, 1994.

## REFLECTIONS

## JAMES SAMUEL AMYX

Sam Amyx was born May 6, 1881 in Sneedville, Hancock Co. TN. He married Annie May Stephens, born February 10, 1898 in Mellissa, Collin Co. TX. Sam and Annie had six children: Roy Luther, John William, Ruby Jane, James Madison (Red), J. S. (Jay) Jr., and Mary Louise. Sam was a charter member of Mountain View Baptist Church in Boise, ID. He died May 12, 1974 at Mt. View Baptist Church on Sunday Morning.

Roy Luther Amyx, oldest child of Sam, farmed at Ponder, TX. He was a great man and encouraged the work of this book, and contributed information and pictures. He died in 1994, and is survived by his wife, Alfreda and one daughter, Freddie Jane Vaughn. Freddie Jane also supplied material for the book. Sam's son, Jay Amyx was mayor of Boise, ID. and also ran for Governor. Red Amyx sent a copy of James Madison Trent and Zana Seal Trent's picture to be put in the book.

Sam Amyx was a Baptist preacher, and following is his Ordination Credentials:

"This certifies that our Brother J. S. Amyx, was publicly ordained and set a part to the work of the Gospel ministry with appropriate religious service, prayer, and the laying on of hands, according to the usage and customs of BAPTIST CHURCHES, by the DECATUR BAPTIST CHURCH, at Decatur, TX, May 7th, 1910.

That this church of which he is a member, after sufficient opportunity for judging of his gifts, were agreed in the opinion that he was divinely called to the work of the ministry.

That the council which was composed of the Pastor of this church, and other pastors, preachers, and deacons, being satisfied on all points, did unanimously recommend his ordination, and being authorized by the Church, did proceed with the ordination as above stated.



That our Brother, J. S. Amyx did accordingly receive the full, entire and hearty approval of the Council in his official entrance upon the work of the ministry, administering the ordinances, and otherwise assuming all the functions of a Christian minister. And may the blessings of the great Head of the Church attend him, crown his labors with abundant success, and make him an honored instrument of good to ZION and the world."

W. L. Ayres: Moderator

Witnessed by others.

Certificate of Recommendation:

"This is to certify that Brother Sam Amyx is a member of the First Baptist Church Sanger, TX in good and regular standing, and is held by us in high esteem. We believe him to have been called of God to the work of the Gospel ministry, and do hereby give him our entire and cordial approbation for the improvement of his gifts, by preaching the gospel. As Providence may affect him opportunity. And we pray the great Head of the Church to endow him with all needful grace, and crown his labors with abundant success.

Done by order of the church, this day.

Pastor, Harlan J. Matthews

## REFLECTIONS

## HENRY EDWARD AMYX

When Henry Edward Amyx and Fannie Mae Depew married on December 15, 1918, they moved into a house 1 mile North of where her father lived. This was on the Jap Wells land in Cooke County Texas, where Fannie's father, William Depew and her brother, Grover Depew sharecrop farmed the land. William Henry was born on this land 10 miles north of the Jap Wells home. Henry and Fannie moved to Ochiltree County, TX in the fall of 1921. At this time Priscilla Dean was born on January 27, 1923. Henry and Fannie and family lived in a full dirt dugout in the Texas Panhandle Northeast of Perryton. Henry farmed with horses in this area. On Friday morning, March 6, 1925, James Everett Amyx was born in the Ernest Wade home.

In 1925, Fannie Mae was stricken by an appendix attack. She was taken to Liberal, KS to the nearest hospital and was confined for several days near death, as the Doctor said he could not do anything else for her. Her appendix apparently had ruptured. But by the Grace of God and in the hands of a wonderful nurse, she lived.

In 1926, Henry Amyx and family moved to Dalhart, TX. Henry obtained work on the Rock Island Railroad as a boilermaker helper, and worked 12 hours a day for good pay. Henry worked for the railroad for 19 years. Being a railroad family, they were able to make trips on the trains every summer. They went to Chicago for the World's Fair in 1933. They attended the Texas Centennial at Dallas, TX in 1936. The family went to San Francisco to a World's Fair on Treasure Island. As a family, they saw Carlsbad Caverns, and made several trips back to Sanger to visit relatives. In 1929 they purchased a house at 901 Channing Street, Dalhart, TX.

Henry and Fannie worked hard during these years. They harvested in fields for local farmers heading maize, picking corn or harvesting broomcorn. They went to the Canadian breaks to gather wild plums for jelly, and to New Mexico and picked peaches and apples. Uncle Sherman would give them deer and antelope meat at times. With their friends they enjoyed outings to Cimmaron Canyon, Red River and Taos, NM. On cold, early mornings they would go out to duck blinds in cornfields, in shocks of Higeer feed and shoot Northern Honker Geese or other birds. They would



get fall watermelons and other food. Later Fannie worked in a laundry as a presser, baby sat, and worked in a fruit cannery. She helped Henry at the dairy, and cooked for the men at the McCrory ranch.

In 1930, Henry and Fannie rented a small acreage with a house and chicken houses. W.H., Priscilla and James walked to Kelly Hill School. They had cold, long walks to school, approximately 2 miles. Fanny raised a big garden, and had a milk cow as most other city folks had then. They hauled in higear bundles for cow feed in the winter. Two bundles a day for 180 days and the cow had to be milked twice a day. In the summer, they herded or staked the cow on pasture land behind the house or rented pasture. The cow had to be driven to pasture 1 mile in the morning and back home 1 mile in the afternoon.

Pearl Harbor was attacked on December 7, 1941, and this was the beginning of World War II. W. H. enlisted in the US Navy Seabees on April 11, 1942, and served (suffered from Malaria during his hitch) until January 6, 1946.

James enlisted into the Army Air Corp. in June 1943. He took his basic training in Wichita Falls, TX. He was schooled in the Cadet Corp, and flew L-5's, B-17's, B-24's, and B-29's as a gunner. He was always being sent off to another school.

Henry passed away on December 12, 1960. Later Fannie developed a heart problem, and went to San Antonio to live with their daughter, Priscilla until her death on February 3, 1967. Henry and Fannie are buried in Memorial Park Cemetery, Dalhart, TX.

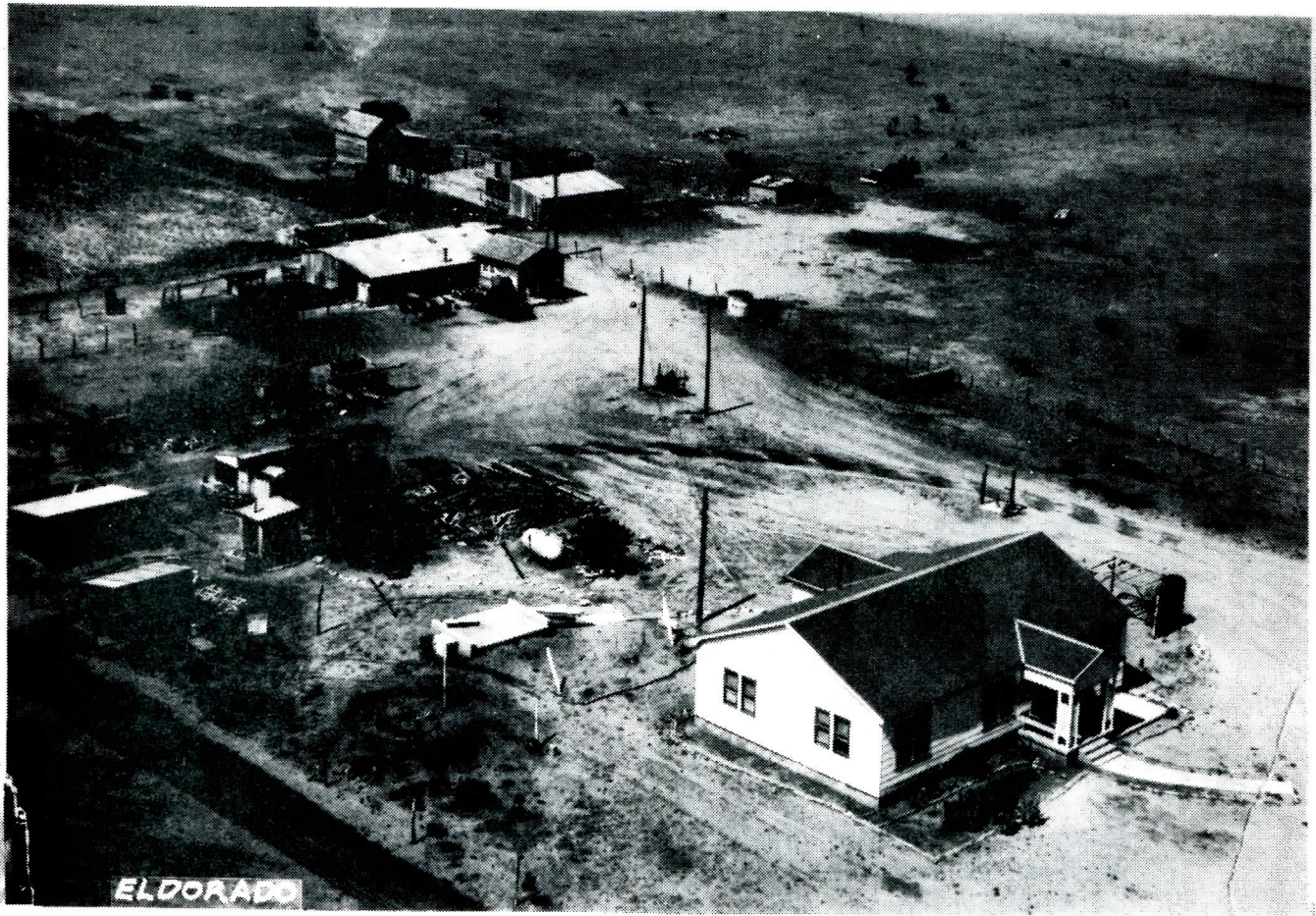
Sent to Gloria West, from W. H. Amyx, 1994.

Note:

I shall take the liberty to share a letter I received from W. H. two days before this book went to the printer. I sincerely appreciate the interest, enthusiasm, and encouragement he has supplied. Knowing about his zeal and desire to research and compile information on all the AMYX FAMILY is important to me. I can identify with those who hold dear to their heart the importance of preserving their FAMILY HISTORY.



HOME OF  
WILLIAM CLINTON AND MYRTLE MARIE AMYX RICE



FARM OF THE MONTH, JACKSON COUNTY OKLAHOMA, HOME OF WM.  
CLINTON AND MYRTLE RICE. ALTUS TIMES DEMOCRAT, EARLY  
1950'S. THIS HOUSE WAS BUILT BY WM. CLINTON RICE IN  
1951. IT IS LOCATED 3 1/2 MILES EAST OF ELDORADO, OK.



September 22, 1994 10:30 A.M.

Roy and Gloria:

Hi.

We are so excited about your book. We want to receive one of the very first autographed and dated copies. Please mail one immediately along with an enclosed bill.

I know it will be excellent because you two have spent so many hours compiling the information. Everyone should get a copy to pass on to the generations to come.

Some forty six years ago at General Motors Institute in La Grange, Illinois, I learned something VERY, VERY important:

"To know where you are going----you must know where you have been."

That is what your book will provide for us!

As ever,

W. H. (Bill) Amyx

This concludes the AMYX AND ALLIED ANCESTORS story.